

UNIVERZITA KARLOVA V PRAZE, FILOZOFICKÁ FAKULTA

ÚSTAV ANGLISTIKY A AMERIKANISTIKY

STUDIJNÍ OBOR: ANGLISTIKA-AMERIKANISTIKA



LEONA DRENKOVÁ

**“SYNTACTIC AND FSP ASPECTS OF THE EXISTENTIAL
CONSTRUCTION IN FICTION”**

VEDOUCÍ PRÁCE: PROF. PHDR. LIBUŠE DUŠKOVÁ, CSC.

2007

**Prohlašuji, že jsem diplomovou práci vypracovala samostatně s
využitím uvedených pramenů a literatury.**

V Praze, dne 31. srpna 2007

Velmi ráda bych poděkovala prof. Duškové za její trpělivé a laskavé vedení, cenné rady a mnoho hodin diskuse na téma aktuálního větného členění. Bez jejích cenných připomínek a odborného vedení by tato diplomová práce nikdy nemohla vzniknout.

I would like to thank prof. Dušková for her patient guidance, helpful advice and many hours of discussion about functional sentence perspective. Without her valuable suggestions and expert guidance this diploma thesis could never have been written.

ABSTRACT

The aim of this study is to examine the existential construction *there is / there are* from two viewpoints: syntactic and functional. Analytical tools devised in the framework of functional sentence perspective (FSP) are employed to explore information structure in two types of existential constructions, viz. bare existential constructions and existential constructions with adverbial(s). The study first comprehensively explains the core of the FSP theory and concepts employed in consequent FSP analyses. The analysis of bare existentials is concerned with two areas of examination. First, syntactic structure of the subject noun phrase is examined; attention is paid primarily to types of modification involved. Second, the FSP structure is identified; the main focus being placed on the structure of the notional subject. A special attention is paid to the FSP patterns the bare existential construction can implement. The problem of questions and focalizers is touched upon. The analysis of existentials with adverbial(s) focuses on the FSP role of adverbials in relation to their position in the sentence, semantics and contextual boundness. Finally the problem of potentiality is pointed out and the occurrence of other verbs than *be* is discussed. The outcome of the study is to identify communicative functions the existential sentence performs and to contribute to the findings in the area of FSP and its application in practise.

ABSTRAKT

Cílem této práce je zkoumat existenciální konstrukci *there is/there are* z hlediska syntaktického a z hlediska aktuálněčlenského za využití analytických nástrojů navržených v rámci teorie o aktuálním členění větném. V teoretické části je podrobně vysvětleno, v čem aktuální členění větné spočívá a všechny koncepty, se kterými se v následných analýzách pracuje, jsou uvedeny a explikovány.

Práce zkoumá dva typy existenciálních konstrukcí, v prvním oddíle praktické části se zabývá tzv. „bare existential constructions“, což jsou konstrukce bez adverbiále, v druhém pak pojednává tzv. „existential constructions with adverbial(s)“, tedy konstrukce, ve kterých se adverbiále vyskytuje. U konstrukcí bez adverbiále si práce všímá syntaktické struktury notionálního podmětu, a dále se zaměřuje na typy modifikace, jež se v podmětové frázi vyskytují. V rámci aktuálního členění větného je pozornost věnována kontextové zapojenosti podmětu a aktuálněčlenským vzorcům, které tento typ konstrukcí může realizovat. Problematika otázek a prostředků vytýkání je stručně

pojedinána. U druhého typu konstrukcí je hlavní pozornost zaměřena na aktuálněčlenskou funkci adverbialé ve vztahu k jeho pozici ve větě, sémantickému obsahu a kontextové zapojenosti. Dále autorka naznačila problematiku potenciality aktuálněčlenských jevů a v závěru práce si všímá výskytu sloves jiných než je sloveso *být*. Výsledkem práce je definování komunikativních funkcí existenciální konstrukce a demonstrace užití teorie o aktuálním členění větném v praxi.

Contents

1. List of Abbreviations and Symbols	8
2. Introduction	9
3. What is FSP?	9
4. Means of FSP.....	14
4.1. The contextual factor.....	16
4.1.1. Means of signalling context-dependence.....	18
4.2. The semantic factor	20
4.2.1. Firbasian scales	21
4.2.2. Extended Presentation Scale	23
5. Realizations of the presentation scale.....	24
5.1. Existential Construction.....	24
5.1.1. Syntacticosemantic Aspects	25
5.1.1.1. Existential <i>there</i> vs. adverbial <i>there</i>	28
5.1.2. FSP Structure.....	29
6. Posing the Problem.....	31
7. Method.....	32
8. Results.....	34
8.1. Bare existential construction.....	35
8.1.1. Syntacticosemantic Aspects	35
8.1.1.1. Treatment of Participles.....	40
8.1.1.2. Syntacticosemantic Aspects - Summary	42
8.1.2. FSP Structure.....	44
8.1.2.1. T(S) – Tr/ R(V) Pattern.....	46
8.1.2.2. T – Tr(V) – R(S) Pattern.....	49
8.1.2.3. Focalizer	53
8.1.2.4. Preliminary Notes on FSP Treatment of Questions.....	55
8.1.2.4.1. Questions – Results.....	57
8.1.2.4.2. Questions – Summary.....	59
8.2. Existential construction with adverbial(s)	59
8.2.1. Final adverbial.....	63

8.2.2.	Extended Presentation Scale	65
8.2.3.	Medial Adverbial	71
8.2.4.	Initial Adverbial.....	72
8.3.	Preliminary Notes on Potentiality.....	74
8.3.1.	PP following a Participle.....	76
8.3.2.	PP following the Head of a Subject Noun phrase	77
8.4.	Verbs Other Than <i>Be</i>	81
9.	Conclusion.....	84
10.	Resumé.....	88
11.	Bibliography.....	91
12.	Sample Sources	95
13.	Appendices	96
I.	Comprehensive analysis (of 200 instances in the sample)	96
II.	Tables (200 instances quantified in 4 tables)	192
III.	Separates	197
a.	Bare Existentials – Syntacticosemantic Aspects	197
b.	<i>Be</i> + participle	201
c.	Bare Existentials – FSP Structure	202
d.	Negative Bare Existentials	207
e.	Focalizer	209
f.	Questions – FSP Structure	210
g.	Existential constructions with adverbial(s) 86	211
h.	Extended Presentation Scale	214
i.	Other Verbs Than <i>Be</i>	215

1. List of Abbreviations and Symbols

Abbreviation / Symbol	Description
T	theme
T(S)	thematic subject
R	rheme
R(V)	rhematic verb
Tr	transition
TrPrO	transition-proper oriented element
NS	notional subject
NP	noun phrase
[...]	an example is not presented in its all length (usually used with an existential clause embedded in a complex/compound sentence)
[text]	an example is presented in its all length, the irrelevant part of sentence is marked by the square brackets so that the part comprising the existential construction under examination stands out
*	invalid structure
(?)	dubious structure

2. Introduction

The present study is intended to examine the existential construction *there is / there are* from two viewpoints: syntactic and functional with the main focus being geared to the functional sentence perspective (FSP). We hope to demonstrate a practical application of FSP to concrete language material and to point out problems that a linguist working in the framework of FSP may encounter. The study is based on detailed analysis of existential sentences extracted from literary texts. The outcome may serve as reference material for teachers of English and for translators who might find useful the insight into the way the existential construction is structured both syntactically and informationally in English.

Let us now introduce the basic concepts that are employed in this study.

3. What is FSP?

One of the fundamental observations of natural languages is that the informational weight within a sentence is not even, but it varies as the sentence gradually unfolds. When entering a conversation, we usually first advert to what has already been mentioned (we reinforce the topic of the conversation) and only afterwards we contribute with some new information and move the communication forward. It follows that the newest elements, i.e. the elements with the largest informational weight tend to be placed furthest to the right of a sentence, towards its end. This principle has been identified among grammarians as the end-focus principle (Quirk et al. 1972: 943) and it has been observed that it applies language universally, i.e. all or almost all languages more or less comply with it (Leech 1983: 65)¹. However, various grammatical systems upon which languages operate allow the end-focus principle to be applicable to a various degree. Whereas in Czech, for example, it is the main force underlying

¹ I owe the references to Dušková 1999: 281

the way in which words are arranged in a sentence, in English the end-focus principle is overridden by the force of the grammatical principle². Czech as a predominantly inflectional language allows a great flexibility of its word order whereas in English, which is predominantly analytical, the word order flexibility is to a large extent restricted. If there is not a free choice in placing the most informative part of a sentence at its end, however, a pressing question arises: Is the linear arrangement of elements really the only factor that signals the most prominent part of a sentence? In spoken language prosodic tools are employed to indicate the central information in a sentence by placing the intonation nucleus on the element carrying that information. Thus, if it cannot be placed at the end of a sentence due to grammatical restrictions, the most informative part of a sentence can be pointed out with an acoustic signal. But how is the informational centre signalled in a written text, where intonation cannot function as an indicator?

At this place the core of the functional sentence perspective (FSP) theory can be best explained. Its main aim is to devise a set of analytical tools that can help us better understand “how the sentence functions at the moment of communication” (Firbas 1992: xi in Preface). This can be achieved by learning about how to reliably identify the element towards which the sentence is *perspectived*,³ i.e. “the element which contributes most to the development of the communication and in this way consummates or completes it” (op. cit., p. 6). Most English scholars working within the framework of FSP⁴ examine sentence parts from the view of their informational significance with the objective to reveal factors that bring the recipient to perceive certain elements in a sentence as more important than the rest (it has been suggested above that it is not always possible to place the most important element at the end of a sentence where it is expected). More will be said about details of the procedure in due course.

² This was first observed by Mathesius 1975: 153-160. He explains the phenomenon in an illuminating way in his book *Nebojte se angličtiny (Don't be afraid of the English language)* in chapter 7 *Jak se v angličtině spojují slova* (How words are arranged in English)

³ This is Jan Firbas' term and he explains the concept of it in 1992: 6, chapter “Communicative dynamism and linear modification – one of the factors of functional sentence perspective”.

⁴ We need to bring to attention the fact that Prague School earned its prestige apart from other things for formulating the fundamental theses on FSP. For the FSP theory in the field of English elaborated especially by Jan Firbas, the founder and main representative of the Brno school (a “geographical” branch of the Prague school of linguistics) see Dušková “Vztahy mezi sémantikou a aktuálním členěním z pohledu anglistických členů Pražského lingvistického kroužku”(forthcoming). Let us also mention E. Hajičová and P. Sgall who take generative approach to FSP.

Now the relevant categories need to be introduced. The concept of informational significance/weight has been termed *communicative dynamism* (CD)⁵. In an FSP analysis, sentence elements are examined in reference to their *degree of CD*.⁶ The element with the highest degree of CD (the carrier of the ‘informational centre’) is the element towards which the sentence is perspectived. A sentence⁷ represents the basic field in which the act of communication is carried out, i.e. it serves as a basic *distributional field* of CD in the act of communication. Syntactic constituents of the sentence (the subject, the verb, the object, etc.) mostly correlate with *communicative units*. (Firbas 1992: 17, Svoboda 1981: 4) with one exception and that is the verb. In Firbas’ view the verb needs to be perceived as two communicative units: one indicated by the notional content of the verb (notional component) and the other indicated by its grammatical categories (categorial exponents) like person, number, tense, mood, voice, or positive/negative polarity (Firbas 1992: 70, 89-93, Svoboda 1981: 4).⁸ A communicative unit is such a part of a sentence where all carriers of CD (it can be one or more) function at the same hierarchical level of communicative development, cf. the adduced example below:

‘There will be important people at the garden party.’

The notional subject ‘important people’ consists of two carriers of CD, one higher (‘important’) and one lower (‘people’)⁹, but they contribute to the development of communication to the same extent in relation to other sentence elements. Within a distributional field communicative units with the lowest degree of CD form the thematic part of a sentence (*theme*), communicative units with the highest degree of CD form the rhematic

⁵ The term was first used by Firbas who drew on Mathesius and his “concept of relative shading of the importance of sentence elements” (see Firbas 1992: 104).

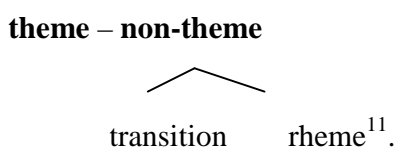
⁶ Cf. “[...] by a degree of communicative dynamism I understand the relative extent to which a linguistic element contributes towards the further development of the communication.” (Firbas 1992: 7-8)

⁷ For the details about the concept of sentence relevant to FSP see Firbas 1992: 14-16, chapter ‘The sentence as a field of relations’. In this study, we take the simple sentence for the basic distributional field, see page below for more details.

⁸ In the present study the concept of categorial exponents is employed to explain the FSP function of a transition-proper oriented element.

⁹ Modification (if context-independent) is understood as an element carrying a higher degree of CD than its head as it particularizes the head by adding some specifying information, see Firbas (1992: 84), Nekvapil (1993: 196).

part (*rheme*), and between these two there is the transitional part (*transition*) mostly performed by the verb¹⁰. The basic scheme of development of a sentence in the act of communication can be shown as follows: Theme – transition – rheme with the remark that the transitional and the rhematic section constitute the non-theme of the whole, cf.



At this point an important statement must be made. The scheme does not necessarily coincide with the linear arrangement of the sentence. The actual word order can differ from the scheme (that represents the gradual rise in communicative dynamism) and it often does, especially in English where the grammatical principle is the decisive force and overrides the FSP principle, as mentioned above. Firbas distinguishes *actual linear arrangement* from *interpretative arrangement* where the latter denotes structures in which the sentence elements are arranged “in accordance with a gradual rise in CD.” As he comments, “the two arrangements may, but need not, coincide” (1992: 12) “Where the sentence structure is consistent with gradual increase in CD, i.e. where the least dynamic element, the theme, occurs initially, and the most dynamic element, the rheme, or focus, is found at the end, with transitional elements coming in between, we speak of *basic distribution of communicative dynamism*” (Dušková 1999: 249 making reference to Firbas 1992: 10)¹².

Within one FSP section, viz. theme, transition, or rheme, two or more components can occur. Then the sections can be subdivided into smaller FSP units and a finer classification takes place. The theme then can be divided into *the theme proper* and *the diatheme* where the theme proper is the element with the lowest degree of CD and the diatheme is the element carrying

¹⁰ In some cases the FSP roles of transition and rheme or transition and theme are telescoped into one (1965: 174-175) due to the fact that the transitional elements passed either into the thematic section or they became rhematized while the rest of the elements receded to the background.

¹¹ FSP as a dichotomy of two complementary sections, viz. theme and rheme, is also apprehended in Mluvnické Čestiny 3, Skladba (A Grammar of Czech 3, Syntax) (1987), but the concept of transition is not recognized (550n.)

¹² Highlighting by italics is mine. The italic serves to highlight terms which are going to be used throughout the present study and which have just been introduced into the discourse.

the highest degree of CD within the thematic section (Firbas 1992: 79-81)¹³. Transition can be divided into *the transition proper*, transition-proper oriented *elements*, and *the rest of transition* where the transition proper represents the very centre of the distributional field of CD (op. cit., p. 89) and the transition-proper oriented elements function as ‘perspectivers’ that move the communication from the theme towards this centre. Where there are more components constituting the rheme, i.e. where the rhematic section consists of more elements than one, *the rheme proper* is distinguished. This is the element towards which the sentence is perspectived, the element with the highest degree of CD (Firbas 1992: 72). The full FSP scheme can be illustrated as follows:

Theme proper – diatheme – transition-proper oriented element – transition proper – rest of transition – rheme – rheme proper.

One more note on the definition of the basic distributional field. The present study examines existential sentences. The basic distributional field corresponds to a simple existential sentence. Our understanding of a simple sentence derives from the definition in CGEL (Quirk et al. 1985: 719, Note [a]). A simple sentence is understood as a grammatical structure composed of a single clause or a grammatical structure where one of the constituents of the single clause is modified by a relative clause. Since the whole structure is understood as a single unit¹⁴, the relative clause together with its main clause (existential sentence) constitutes one distributional field that comprises two (clausal) distributional subfields. This conception can be also understood on the basis of the relationship between a noun and its modification – the two components are so closely linked with one another that they – the same as the main clause with its relative clause – form a single unit. This is reflected in FSP where the head noun constitutes one communicative unit together with its modification. By analogy, a relative clause (by definition a modification) constitutes together with its superordinate clause one FSP

¹³ “Svoboda has devised a scale of thematic functions reflecting a gradual rise in CD. The bottom end of this scale is taken up by ThPr [= theme proper] and the upper end by DTh [= diatheme], theme proper oriented elements (ThPro) and diatheme oriented elements (DTho) ranking between them” (Firbas 1992: 81). For our present study the classification working with concepts of diatheme and theme proper is sufficient.

¹⁴ For a contrastive treatment of a complex (and simple) sentence in British and Czech linguistic tradition see Dušková (1999: 219-228). The summation of the concept of a simple sentence that CGEL works with can be found on p. 221, section 1.2.1.

unit. Thus in example 1 the whole of sentence was considered for FSP analysis, but only the main clause in example 2 comprising an existential construction was examined.

1. There is a clever German doctor who has recently divided melancholia into several types. (F118)
2. There was, too, something faintly dark about him, [for he had been born a Catholic [...]] (F119)

The concept of distributional field having been explained, in the present study the examined unit comprising an existential construction is further on referred to as (existential) ‘sentence’ (instead of more appropriate but clumsy ‘sentence/clause’).

4. Means of FSP

Jan Firbas significantly contributed to the FSP theory in his numerous profound studies on the topic and most fundamentally in his book *Functional Sentence Perspective in Written and Spoken Communication* (1992), which has so far been the most comprehensive study in the field¹⁵. He revealed four factors which – by their mutual interplay – bring a particular element into the foreground. They are **linearity**: the linear arrangement of sentence elements which carry a degree of CD according to their position from the lowest to the highest from the left to the right respectively; **context dependence**: the elements appearing in the preceding context carry lower degree of CD than those mentioned for the first time; **semantics**: the meaning of sentence elements, namely the verb, which by its meaning either introduces a new phenomenon on the scene and then the presented phenomenon is the element towards which the sentence is perspectived, or it directs the attention towards its complementation (if the complementation is missing, then the attention is directed towards the verb itself) and then the sentence is perspectived towards the *quality* of a phenomenon.¹⁶ Compare two Firbas’ examples (1992: 67-69):

¹⁵ Prague-based scholar Libuše Dušková and Firbas’ disciple Aleš Svoboda (both members of the Prague school of linguistics) have decisively contributed to the development of the theory and the author of this study draws heavily on their findings.

¹⁶ Firbas explains, “Quality is to be understood here in a wide sense, covering an action or a state, permanent or transitory, concrete or abstract” (1992: 5).

3. *Ages ago there was a young king.*

(the sentence is perspectived towards presentation of a phenomenon, i.e. ‘a young king’)

4. *He/The young king ruled his country capriciously and despotically.*

(the sentence is perspectived towards the quality, i.e. ‘capriciously and despotically’).

“Generally speaking, these three means of FSP can be hierarchically ordered: semantics is superior to linearity, and context is superior both to linearity and semantics.” (Svoboda 1981: 2).

In spoken communication the last of the four factors is put into operation: **intonation**. As intonation is a wide concept, we need to mention that in FSP, the placement of intonation nucleus and its association with new information is of primary interest. Generally the intonation prominence is associated with semantic prominence (e.g. Halliday and Hasan 1976: 69, Firbas 1974: 30, 1992: 148-154); however it has been observed that coincidence between the carrier of the most important information and the intonation nucleus in a sentence is not always the case¹⁷. Svoboda remarks, “The reason why communicative prominence and prosodic prominence do not go hand in hand is seen in the fact that in case the other three FSP factors signal the communicative prominence sufficiently, the prosodic features are free to convey other (e.g. attitudinal) meanings” (2005: 219).

Commenting on the interplay of all four factors in FSP, Svoboda summarizes, “All the above factors represent indispensable aspects of natural language communication, because such communication must be linearized (linearity), must convey meaning (semantics), cannot be realized in isolation (context), and if spoken, cannot be realized without rhythm, melody, and pauses (prosodic features¹⁸)” (2005: 217).

As the linearity factor seems rather straightforward (basically it concerns word order) and the intonation factor could have been applied only marginally in our analyses (since the material

¹⁷ The incongruence has been observed, for example, in questions. We touch the problem below, see pp. 55-57

¹⁸ Prosodic features is an alternate term to intonation cf. Svoboda 2005: 218, 2.1

for this study was obtained from written text where intonation is indicated only scarcely¹⁹), we need to pay some more attention to the contextual and semantic factors.

4.1. The contextual factor

Context is probably the most powerful factor contributing to our perception of a piece of information either as given or new. The basic rule that applies is that elements appearing in the preceding context are recognized as communicatively less important (i.e. they carry a lower degree of CD) than elements entering the discourse for the first time (these are carriers of high degree of CD). The elements known from the context are referred to as *context-dependent*, i.e. for their interpretation the reader/listener depends on the preceding text (anaphoric personal pronouns like ‘he’, ‘she’, ‘they’ are typical examples of context-dependent elements). The elements unknown from the preceding text are referred to as *context-independent*, i.e. we are able to interpret them per se, without reference to the prior text. However, before the rule can be applied, the broad concept of context needs to be explained and specified. There are three types of context, viz. **experiential** (= context of general experience taken into account during the act of communication), **situational** (= context of situation within which communication takes place), and **verbal** (= context constituted by preceding sentences/text) (Svoboda 1981: 4).

In assessing the degree of CD that an element in a sentence carries, the situational context overrides the experiential context and the verbal context overrides the other two. The verbal context thus plays the most important role and has the largest impact on our perception of an element in communication as regards its informational importance (the degree of CD the element carries). A question arises what length of preceding verbal context should be taken in consideration: if an element appears at the beginning of a book and now, half-way through it re-appears, do we consider it context-dependent and in consequence assign it a low degree of CD? Firbas responds in negative and he explains, “*In regard to FSP, the concept of known information must be considerably narrowed. This necessitates the introduction of the*

¹⁹ For example the contrastive stress usually betrays itself in print by italic or bold font. In fact, intonation was often taken into account as a tool of a double check: the intonation nucleus should coincide with the rheme proper in a distributional field. Thus when a sentence under examination is spoken aloud, the assessed rheme proper should be plausible as a carrier of the main sentence stress.

immediately relevant verbal and situational context, immediate relevance being assessed in relation to the point in the flow of communication at which a new sentence is produced and/or taken in which separates the mass of information accumulated so far from the mass of information to be further accumulated.” (1994: 22 with reference to Daneš 1974: 112) The concept of **immediately relevant context** appears to be crucial for analysing a sentence on the FSP level. It is grounded in the observation that at the moment of ‘the immediately relevant communicative step’ (Firbas 1992: 23) only a fragment of the mass of ‘information accumulated’ is activated in reader’s/listener’s consciousness, i.e. it is available to him as something known. Analysing written text, we need to ask how big a fragment this is, i.e. what stretch of preceding text represents the immediately relevant context. Firbas relates it to so-called ‘**retrievability span**’ which is a stretch of text in which a piece of information remains retrievable (i.e. available to the reader as known information) (Firbas 1995). Examining the phenomenon of retrievability span in literary texts, Firbas observed that it is very short, about seven preceding sentences (with the reservation that the subject calls for further exploration), thus if a phenomenon appears at a distance longer than seven sentences, its retrievability is weakened and in consequence it is considered as a carrier of new information²⁰. In the light of these observations, analyses upon which this study is based include the immediately relevant context among crucial factors that need to be taken in consideration when determining the degrees of CD in sentence elements and consequently the sentence meaning in the act of communication.

Depending on to what extent context operates over a sentence, three instance levels have been identified (Svoboda 2005: 219 with reference to Firbas, see section 2.2):

A/ the basic instance level (all sentence elements are context-independent and only semantics and linearity determine the information structure of a sentence)

B/ the ordinary instance level (there are both context-dependent and context-independent elements and all three means of FSP are involved)

²⁰ A similar conclusion was arrived at by Svoboda (in Firbas 1992: 23) and Hajičová and Vrbová (op. cit., p. 23-4); who examined spoken texts, and concluded that a piece of information remains activated for very short stretches of texts. For a detailed study about the retrievability span see Firbas 1995.

C/ the second instance level (all sentence elements are context-dependent but one which is at the moment of utterance brought into distinct prominence and only contextual factor asserts itself) (after Svoboda 1981: 4)

A vast majority of sentences in our sample operate at the ordinary instance level.

4.1.1. Means of signalling context-dependence

Next, the means of signalling context-(in)dependence in a text should be mentioned. Within a noun phrase the category of (in)definiteness is in play. It is realized by determiners, viz. articles, demonstratives, possessives, quantifiers and *wh*-words (Dušková 1999: 300 fn. 1). Naturally, an indefinite noun phrase has a disposition to indicate new information (and hence context-independence) while a definite noun phrase is predisposed to signal known information (and hence context dependence). This predisposition is very strong in existential constructions²¹. However, since the FSP function of a noun phrase is formed by the interplay of three factors (four in speech), “both a definite and an indefinite noun phrase can assume either thematic or rhematic function” (Dušková 1999: 289) Hence, while analysing FSP of sentences within our sample, we had to bear in mind that not all definite articles signal context dependence. The cataphoric definite article had to be eliminated, as it does not point back to the text, and hence it cannot be considered as an indicator of context dependence; it merely signals that “the modifying elements are to be taken as defining: we are to understand only such members of the general class named by the Head noun as are specified in the Modifier” (Halliday and Hasan 1976: 72), cf. the definite article in noun phrase ‘the chance’ + postmodification:

5. He said that if one had a clue this was the worst way; but if one had no clue at all it was the best, because there was just **the chance that any oddity that caught the eye of the pursuer might be the same that had caught the eye of the pursued.** (Ch51)

²¹ Cf. Dušková who writes, “The predisposition of the anaphoric definite and non-generic indefinite article to signal, respectively, given and new information manifests itself primarily with verbs of appearance/existence on the scene, and with verbs taking an effected or affected object.” (1999: 289)

Here the notion of chance is new and it has just been introduced into the narrative, the newness heightened by the use of focalizer ‘just’.

Similarly, “the definite article, which indicates a situationally unique object may determine either a new or a given item” (Dušková 1997: 46), the article signalling merely the uniqueness of the object in particular situation but not signifying that the object is known from the preceding text, cf.

6. And there was a sparkle of yellow jasmine by the door; (L30)

Here the notion of ‘door’ is mentioned for the first time and as such is context-independent regardless of the definite article. To treat references to situational context as a signal of context-dependence might be a treacherous starting point for analysing FSP of a sentence. An element subjected to such reference is ‘linked with the context of situation’ (see exophoric reference in Halliday and Hasan 1976: 37) but it does not mean the element must be known to the reader. References to the situational context cannot be considered as a priori signalling context-dependence²², but rather as signals of a low degree of CD since the reader is instructed to treat the elements as given despite the fact that in reality they are new to him.

In effect, means of signalling context dependence correspond with means of textual cohesion, viz. anaphora, substitution, ellipsis, lexical reiteration (Halliday and Hasan 1976) – these all have been taken into consideration in the process of identification of the information structure in the existential constructions within our sample. It needs to be stressed, however that at the same time we bore in mind that “the concept of cohesive relationship is not identical with that of context dependence: it is a wider concept” (Firbas 1992: 34). Cohesive relationship being a

²² We believe that this treatment of situational reference is specific to written literary text where the writer uses reference to situation in order to create an atmosphere of familiarity: the reader is invited to picture the situation in which communication takes place, cf. *There was a great relaying of the table, and the best cups brought and the best teapot* (L40) where ‘the table’ has just been introduced into the narrative (it is a context-independent element). The definite article indicates that there is only one table in the room in which the narrated event takes place and thus the reader visualises the event better as if he himself was present in the room. But in reality he has just been introduced to the fact that there was a table in the room. This principle underlies another literary technique called ‘*in medias res* effect’ through which “the reader is plunged into the midst of things” (Firbas 1992: 40). It is often used in story openings, cf. Firbas’ example *He really was an impossible person* where the reader’s curiosity regarding “who ‘he’ might be?” is stimulated. The element ‘he’ is “not context-dependent, but only presented as such” (ibid).

wider concept than the relationship of context dependence can be demonstrated on the phenomenon of lexical reiteration where two components displaying a ‘semantic associative meaning’ (op. cit., p. 33), e.g. *near relatives – sister* (cf. example L2 in our sample, Appendix I) establish cohesive relationship but do not necessarily establish the relationship of context dependence. Cf. Firbas, “*When expressed by the second member of the pair so associated, this feature becomes retrievable, but is evidently not strong enough to predominate and to make its bearer behave like a context-dependent element. In contrast to a fully context-dependent element, which on account of its context dependence is prevented from expressing the information towards which the sentence is perspectived, the bearer of the associative semantic feature does not lose its capacity for conveying such information*” (ibid)²³.

In the course of this study it will become evident that the phenomenon of context dependence is not like a light-switch, having only two positions, dependent or independent, but rather it displays scalar quality.

4.2. The semantic factor

The semantic factor needs to be considered in more detail. Firbas (1992) introduced a new level of semantic analysis into the theory of FSP: apart from the static semantic roles which tie in with sentence constituents (e.g. agent, patient, effected object, affected object, etc.) he also recognises *dynamic semantic roles* varying in the act of communication according to the communicative intention of the speaker/writer.²⁴ On this level of semantic analysis, it may thus occur that in two different acts of communication one sentence constituent may have two different dynamic semantic roles. Let us demonstrate this on the two following examples where the adverbial of place needs to be paid attention:

7. [I believe the force in that blow was just] the force there is in earthquakes (Ch93)

²³ The concept of known information is elaborated on by František Daneš (1979) in his study “O identifikaci známé (kontextově zapojené) informace v textu” (On identification of given [contextually bound] information in a text. In his attempt to identify and classify relationships between two affined entities in a text ($K_1 - K_2$), the relationship of **semantic contiguity** (section 2. 2) is inspiring for us. It seems relevant in that it is a relationship of non-identical reference, which holds between two entities that share some semantic aspects, but at the same time the second component K_2 brings along some new information into the act of communication.

²⁴ To sum up Firbasian conception of dynamic semantic roles vs. static semantic roles we drew from Svoboda’s study “Firbasian Semantic Scales and Comparative Studies” (2005: 217-229) and Dušková’s study “Vztahy mezi sémantikou a aktuálním členěním z pohledu členů Pražského lingvistického kroužku” (forthcoming)

8. [And Mrs. Bolton was carefully dressing him in evening clothes,] for there were important business guests in the house. (L36)²⁵

Despite the fact that the two sentences are not introduced in a broader context, it can be observed that the first sentence is perspectived towards the adverbial (*in earthquakes*) while in second example the adverbial (*in the house*) constitutes mere setting against the background of which a phenomenon is introduced and the sentence is thus perspectived towards that phenomenon, i.e. the notional subject (*important business guests*). In the first example the adverbial has the dynamic semantic role of *specification*, in the second example it is the dynamic semantic role of *scene*. The dynamic semantic roles will be discussed in more detail in due course. At this point an important remark must be made. The dynamic semantic level of description must be systematically kept apart from the FSP level of description and at the same time both need to be taken into consideration. It means that we work with two sets of categories: on the one hand there are dynamic semantic categories like scene or specification, and on the other there are FSP categories like theme, transition, and rheme. That way we acquire the desired tool for acute observations and analyses of a sentence meaning in the act of communication (= FSP).

4.2.1. Firbasian scales

As it has been suggested above, the meaning of the verb is decisive for the meaning of the whole sentence²⁶. In relation to whether the verb implies an introduction of a phenomenon on the scene (presentation) or whether it points towards itself or its complementation (qualification), Jan Firbas identified two scales distinct in their dynamic semantic function: the **presentation scale** and the **qualification scale**.

The presentation scale comprises three dynamic semantic units, i.e. sentence constituents function in one of three dynamic semantic roles: scene (setting), presentation of a phenomenon on the scene, and the presented phenomenon. The dynamic semantic role of scene coincides

²⁵ The examples come from the corpus of sentences comprising an existential construction, which was created for the purpose of this study. All collected sentences can be found in Appendix I.

²⁶ Cf. Dušková's "Vztahy mezi sémantikou a aktuálním členěním z pohledu členů Pražského lingvistického kroužku" (forthcoming)

with the theme within a distributional field, presentation with the transition, and the presented phenomenon coincides with the rheme. Cf. Svoboda’s example ‘A dog barked in the distance’:

Scene/Setting	Presentation of Phenomenon	Phenomenon Presented
(Sc) Theme <i>in the distance</i>	(Pr) Transition <i>barked</i>	(Ph) Rheme <i>A dog</i>

(after Svoboda 2005: 222)

The qualification comprises scene²⁷, quality bearer, quality, and specification. Dynamic semantic roles of quality and quality bearer are obligatory. Scene and quality bearer rank among thematic elements, quality coincides with the transitional part of a sentence and specification is rhematic. Where there is no specification, the sentence is perspectived towards the quality (the verb), which then makes the rheme of the sentence (Svoboda 2005: 222). Cf. Svoboda’s example ‘Our dog barked at our neighbour yesterday’:

Scene/Setting	Quality Bearer	Quality	Specification
(Sc) Theme <i>yesterday</i>	(QB) Theme <i>Our dog</i>	(Q) Transition <i>Barked</i>	(Sp) Rheme <i>at our neighbour</i>

(ibid)

There are two modifications of the qualification scale (see Dušková’s “Vztahy mezi sémantikou a aktuálním členěním z pohledu členů Pražského lingvistického kroužku”, forthcoming), the combined scale and the scale with a copular verb. The concept of **combined scale** needs to be discussed in greater detail. Firbas explains the combined scale as a construction where the subject performs the dynamic semantic function of presented phenomenon and simultaneously it performs the dynamic semantic function of a quality bearer. Cf. his example

9. *Ages ago a young king ruled his country capriciously and despotically.* (1992: 67)

²⁷ Svoboda comments: “Scene may be present on any scale because everything happens at some time, in some place, and under certain circumstances.” (2005: 222)

Here, within one distributional field both presentation and qualification are expressed; consider the underlying construction:

Ages ago there was a young king, who ruled the country capriciously and despotically.
(ibid)

Firbas comments, “The original basic distributional field telescopes the Ph-function and the B-function into the subject and in this way implements the Combined scale.”(ibid)

4.2.2. Extended Presentation Scale

However, linguists working within the framework of Firbasian dynamic semantic scales have observed that the repertory of two scales may not be sufficient (Chamonikolasová – Adam 2005). This observation can be squared with the observations on the examples examined for the purpose of the present study. The following example from our corpus demonstrates the difficulty in identifying the sentence perspective when there are only two dynamic semantic scales available:

10. ‘There was dust on his brown tunic, his crossgartered legs, his old shoes.’ (G152)

Despite its strong presentation character, the sentence is not perspectived towards the presented phenomenon (*dust*), but towards its ubiquitous quality. The reader notices the fact that the dust is present and then more intensively the fact that it is present everywhere. The sentence thus presents a phenomenon (*dust*) and then it specifies it (*everywhere*). Such cases are not isolated ones. Chamonikolasová tries to classify the recalcitrant examples and she suggests extending the repertory of the dynamic semantic scales (in Chamonikolasová – Adam 2005). She works with Firbasian conception of combined scale and she points out that the combined scale shows either predominant features of qualification (see the example *Ages ago...* above) or presentation (see the example *There was dust...* above). Accordingly, **the extended qualification scale** and **the extended presentation scale** need to be recognised, respectively. In the present study the concept of extended presentation scale is employed to

assess all instances where apart from presentation the dynamic semantic function of specification is present as well, cf.

Scene/Setting	Presentation of Phenomenon	Phenomenon Presented	Specification
(Sc) Theme <i>There</i>	(Pr) Transition <i>was</i>	(Ph) Rheme <i>dust</i>	(Sp) Rheme Proper <i>on his brown tunic, his crossgartered legs, his old shoes</i>

(After Chamonikolasová – Adam 2005: 62, appended with example G152)

5. Realizations of the presentation scale

The presentation scale is most frequently implemented by means of four syntactic forms:

A/ the existential construction, cf.

There were few alterations.

B/ the construction with rhematic subject in postverbal position, cf.

A noise, a sort of low growl, came from the waterfall.

C/ the construction with rhematic subject in preverbal position, cf.

Across the street is a grocery.

D/ the construction where a semantically adverbial element operates as the subject with the phenomenon appearing on the scene operating as the object, cf.

This road carries a lot of traffic. (Dušková 1998: 36)²⁸.

5.1. Existential Construction

The present study focuses on one type of realization of the presentation scale and that is the existential construction.

²⁸ The examples were collected by Dušková, 1998. They are ordered according to the frequency of occurrence from the most to the least frequent. For a more detailed treatment of each of the realizations of the presentation scale see *ibid.*

5.1.1. Syntacticosemantic Aspects

From the syntactic point of view, the minimal existential construction comprises existential *there*, a verb of existence/appearance on the scene (in an overwhelming majority of instances it is the verb *be*, occasionally other verbs like *exist*, *come*, etc.) and the notional subject (a noun, gerund or nominal expression²⁹), cf.

11. There was a silence. (Ch57)

12. If old James Allsop hasn't risen from his grave, it's because there's no rising (L34)

13. Here is the Reef Island, if ever there was one. (Ch81)

In our sample indefinite pronouns often constitute the head of the subject noun phrase.

An adverbial element can occur as an obligatory part of an existential construction and thus semantically distinguish the existential-locative type (see example 5 below) from the bare existential type (see examples 1-3 above). "The adverbial element in the existential-locative type is obligatory in that it expresses the meaning of existence of a phenomenon in some place or at some time"³⁰ (Dušková 1994: 354), thus the existential-locative type does not only express the meaning of existence of a phenomenon, but it also embeds the existence of a phenomenon into a location either in time or space, cf.

14. There were hollows and bowers at the extreme end of that leafy garden (Ch66)

Apart from the bare existential and existential-locative type there are two more variations of existential construction. It is the action type where the action is expressed by an actional noun, which occurs as the notional subject of the construction, cf. the following two examples below

15. There was a constant adzing going on in the shed outside the north transept, and a constant banging and thumping from the roof over the vault. (G162)

²⁹ See Dušková 1999: 88

³⁰ The quote was translated from Czech to English by the author of this study, as were other quotes from Dušková's volume from 1984, which was published in Czech.

16. There were various small rustlings – he supposed she was getting into the bed.
(F148)

Dušková points out that this type is often employed to describe atmospheric and weather conditions (1994: 355), cf. an example from our corpus

17. There came a stronger gust of wind (F101)

Finally, there is the modal type which apart from introducing a phenomenon on the scene also conveys the notion of modality, cf. an example from our corpus and compare with the translation

18. Now, by a subtle pervasion of the new spirit, he had somehow been pushed out. It was he who did not belong any more. There was no mistaking it. (L43)

A teď, s postupným pronikáním nového ducha, byl nějak vytlačován. To on už sem nepatřil. Nedalo se o tom pochybovat.

What is conveyed apart from presentation is epistemic modality, in the example above it is the notion of ‘possibility’ involving “human judgement of what is or is not likely to happen” (Quirk et al. 1985: 219)³¹

All four types are introduced and explicated after Dušková 1994: 353-355. They are all represented in our corpus as can be recognized from the illustrative examples. For the purposes of our study the four syntacticosemantic categories have been re-grouped into two types, viz. bare existential construction and existential construction with adverbial(s). In the process special attention has been paid to adverbials. One more note on the re-grouping needs to be made. The criterion determining whether a sentence is treated as bare existential appears evident: if an adverbial is absent in the structure, it is considered bare. However, there is one exception to the rule and that is the presence of focusing adverbs. Despite their adverbial

³¹ For more information on epistemic modality go to Dušková 1994: 185-203 or to Quirk et al. 1985: 219-236. Quirk et al. use another widely used term for epistemic modality and that is ‘extrinsic’ modality.

nature they differ from the rest of adverbials in that apart from the capacity to emphasize a verb and/or an adjective, they can also do so with a noun (Dušková 1994: 473). On the level of FSP, due to their focusing nature they are assigned a special role and that is the role of a focus anticipator, i.e. they signalise a rhematic element by pointing towards it³². In the present study we adopted the term *focalizer*, a term denoting the FSP role of a focus anticipator. The presence of a focalizer does not have a bearing on our classification, i.e. an existential construction comprising a focalizer is classified ‘bare’ as long as it does not comprise another adverbial.

The syntactic approach also involves analyses where the structure of the noun phrase as notional subject is examined, i.e. whether it consists of a bare head noun, whether the head noun is modified and if so, by what means, are subject to observation.

The existential *there* anticipates, i.e. points forward to the notional subject³³. “It is not, however, a mere formal means of filling the regular position of the subject, but it is a constitutive element of the existential and existential-locative sentence type” (Dušková 1994: 353), i.e. without its presence, the sentence would not be grammatical as well as in the ‘pure’ existential type

- * A silence was.
- * No rising is.
- * [...] if ever one was.

Or its semantics would change from the existential-locative to ‘pure’ locative as in

Hollows and bowers were at the extreme end of that leafy garden (after Dušková 1999: 89, the examples come from our corpus).

³² The negative particle ‘not’ and negative determiner ‘no’ fulfil the same role in FSP, viz. the role of negative focus anticipator. It appears that negation is by nature of rhematic character since it necessarily stimulates our attention to the entity negated. Firbas speaks of negative focus anticipator = NegFocA (1994: 102-104), the term we adopted in this study.

³³ It is to be noted that linguists do not agree on the syntactic role of *there*. On the one hand it is viewed as an *introducer*, a part of a fixed formula, on the other hand it is viewed as a grammatical subject anticipating the subject proper. In the present study we take the latter standpoint endorsed by Dušková extending Quirk et al. 1972: 958 (Dušková 1999: 87-88).

5.1.1.1. Existential *there* vs. adverbial *there*

Existential *there* needs to be distinguished from the adverbial *there*. In spoken language it differs in reduced pronunciation (in that respect it behaves as other function words in general), compare existential /ðə/ and adverbial /ðeə/. Semantically it does not refer to a location (it points towards it, but the word alone does not have locative meaning) unlike in sentences with adverbial *there* where it fulfils two functions. First, it is used as a deictic expression (pointing outside the text the same as deictic *here*), second, it stands for an adverbial of place: adverbial *there* has a full locative meaning reflecting an antecedent (Dušková 1994: 392)³⁴. Compare example 19 (existential *there*) with examples 20 and 21 (adverbial *there*). In example 20 the adverbial *there* reflects its antecedent anaphorically (i.e. it refers back to the text), in example 21 it is cataphoric (i.e. it stands for the locative adverbial which is introduced later in the text):

19. She slipped out silently and unseen. There was half a moon shining, enough to make the a little light in the world, not enough to show her up in her dark-grey coat.(L49)

20. “It’s the....it’s the.... pussy!” Shudders of subsiding sobs.

“What pussy, dear?”

After a silence the shy fist, clenching on sixpence, pointed into the bramble brake.

“There!”

Connie looked and there [= in the bramble brake], sure enough, was a big black cat, stretched out grimly, with a bit of blood on it. (L00)³⁵

21. There [= at the wall] she would stand at the wall and look out at the sea, [...]. (The French Lieutenant’s Woman. Fowles 1985: 58)

³⁴ Halliday and Hasan refer to existential *there* as to a PRONOUN while the adverbial *there* is treated as a DEMONSTRATIVE ADVERB (1976: 74).

³⁵ Example 20 comes from D. H. Lawrence’s *Lady Chatterley’s Lover*. In our corpus it stands apart from regular numbering of examples, as it does not occur among the two hundred examples of existential construction. It has been kept to illustrate the usage of adverbial *there*.

Existential *there* and adverbial *there* can occur simultaneously in one construction, the fact that highlights different nature of the two, cf.

22. “There was nobody there [= outside the shop, on the street], for I stood just outside the shop at the corner, and could see down both streets at once.” (Ch68)

Examining the nature of existential *there*, Firbas points out that as well as the pronouns by which the notion of speaker/writer and listener/reader is referred to, the existential *there* “can be introduced into the discourse directly, not pronominalizing any antecedents (predecessors)” (1992: 24), which in fact means that in his view existential *there* ranks among deictic expressions³⁶. Firbas further comments, “Though semantically very weak, it is not totally stripped of all meaning. As an integral part of the existential construction, it acts as an indicator of a scene expressed by a genuine adverbial of place” (ibid).

5.1.2. FSP Structure

From the FSP point of view, the existential construction enables the basic distribution of CD without disturbing the operation of grammatical word order and thus it helps to resolve the tension between the FSP principle and the grammatical principle. While the initial position is occupied by the existential *there* (grammatical subject), the postverbal position is reserved for the notional subject (the subject proper) and thus the presented phenomenon (conveyed by the notional subject) acquires a position in conformity with its high degree of CD (otherwise the subject is restricted to the positions to the left of the verb, i.e. the thematic part of a sentence³⁷).

Often, the existential construction contains an adverbial. Then the basic distribution of CD can be partly impaired where a scene-setting (i.e. thematic) adverbial is placed in the final

³⁶ This was prompted to me by Dušková.

³⁷ Among other syntactic means of achieving the basic distribution of CD by enabling a rhematic subject proper to occur in the rhematic section of a sentence there are passive constructions, pseudo-cleft constructions, or tough movement constructions allowing the infinitival subject to be placed to the right of the verb. For treatment of it-clefts and pseudo clefts from the FSP point of view see Dušková 1999: 318-332).

position, in which case a thematic element (adverbial) follows a rhematic element (notional subject), cf.

23. She had had strict orders to remove herself as soon as she had greeted the traveller:
there was to be no duenna nonsense that evening. (F146)

Final adverbial, however, can also serve as a specification (extended presentation scale) carrying the highest degree of CD and functioning as the rheme proper of the clause. Such an existential construction then again displays the basic distribution of CD, cf.

24. [...] there was no ultimate exit at all except through this front door, which was guarded by Ivan and the armoury (Ch54)

In initial positions the adverbial serves either as a scene or as a *transition-proper oriented element* (Firbas 1992: 49, 77-78). A transition-proper oriented element is such a communicative unit which is in its FSP function closely related to the function performed by the verb, i.e. transition. As well as the verb, it enters the flow of communication after the theme, but before the rheme. As well as the categorial exponents of the verb, especially the tense and mood exponents, the TMEs, (op. cit., p. 18), it contributes to the sentence meaning in the act of communication with temporal and modal notions. Firbas mentions sentence adverbs and adverbials of indefinite time among constituents performing the FSP role of transition-proper oriented elements (TrPro) (op. cit., p. 77-79) as well as conjunctions (endorsing Svoboda's understanding of conjunctions): "Owing to its character, a conjunction comes close not only to the TMEs of the field it introduces, but also to the TMEs of the field to which the one introduced is linked on." (op. cit., p. 93) Falling back on these observations, in our analyses conjunctions as well as sentence adverbs and in some cases adverbials of indefinite time³⁸ are regarded as TrPros in the presence of successful competitors of the verb,³⁹ see the examples below:

³⁸ Adverbs of indefinite time can also serve as a setting, Firbas explains, "As for the adverbial of indefinite time, it remains closely related to the temporal indication conveyed by the TMEs and is regarded as TrPro if framed in between the subject and the verbal notional component. If occurring outside this frame, it may loosen its relationship with the TMEs and serve as a setting or perhaps even specification" (1992: 78).

25. Oh, if only (TrPro) there were other men to be with, to fight that sparkling electric Thing outside there, to preserve the tenderness of life, the tenderness of women, and the natural riches of desire. (L38)
26. Unfortunately (TrPro) there was now a duenna present – Mrs Tranter’s cook. (F116)
27. for already (TrPro) there was less dust in the air (G156)

The concept of transition-proper oriented element being explained, we need to return to adverbials, that is to their FSP function within existential constructions in relation to their position. In medial positions adverbials function in all three FSP roles that Firbas ascribes to adverbials, viz. setting, TrPro, specification, cf.

28. there lay behind him (Set) all those years of thought, speculation, self-knowledge (F140)
29. there were always (TrPro) people in the house (L19)
30. There never (Spec) have been more than fifteen waiters at this place (Ch60)

6. Posing the Problem

It can be observed that an adverbial is a very versatile element, a fact which illustrates the problem facing the linguistic analyst working within the frame of FSP theory: if an adverbial can function in three different roles, what factors determine our FSP interpretation of it? And is the interpretation always unequivocal? In the present study we will try to provide some answers to these questions.

³⁹ In case there are no successful competitors of the verb, they can perform function of the rheme, cf. Firbas’ example, “This happened sometimes (Sp), not every day (Sp).” (1992: 78). For

The FSP approach also involves analyses where the noun phrase constituting the notional subject is examined from the viewpoint of context dependence. Does the noun phrase consist of elements solely irretrievable from the preceding context? Are any of the elements traceable in the context? Are there any cases of entirely context-dependent subjects proper within the sample? If so, what effect is produced? Observations which would provide answers to such questions have been made and these have been further analysed.

7. Method

The present study is based on an analysis of a sample of 200 instances which contain an existential construction. The sample was obtained from four literary texts, 50 instances were extracted from each. Two texts (Lawrence, Chesterton) date back to the turn of the 20th century, the other two (Fowles, Golding) were selected to represent more contemporary fiction; both were written in 1960s – 1970s. The same process of extracting instances was applied to all four texts: every fifth page was inspected and the first sentence on the page that included an existential construction was recorded. In case the literary work was not large enough, every third page was searched. The method was chosen in an attempt to cover the largest part of the literary text possible and also to avoid repetition⁴⁰. Each instance found was given a number, starting with number 1 and finishing with number 200. Hence Lawrence's text is represented by instances 1 – 50, Chesterton's by instances 51 – 100, etc. When an instance from our small corpus is referred to, a combination of a capital letter and a number is used to imply the author and the number of the instance in our corpus, e.g. (G189) indicates that the instance was extracted from Golding's text and in the corpus it is the 189th instance.

Each extracted sentence was scrutinized regarding its syntactic structure as well as its FSP structure. A commentary was attached to most of the sentences; especially the first examples

⁴⁰ The danger of repetition turned out at the very beginning of the excerpt, more precisely after example 13 was obtained, when in a short stretch of text a string of existential sentences appeared which concerned the same subject matter, cf.

A/ *As for Clifford's writing, it's smart but there's nothing in it.*

B/ [...] *what did her father mean by saying there was nothing in Clifford's writing?*

C/ [...] *these stories Sir Malcolm said there was nothing in*

D/ *Why should there be anything in them?*

This situation made us realize we wished for a more varied sample and the method of selection described above started to be applied.

are provided with a detailed explanation regarding the method of assigning the FSP structure. Gradually the need to comment and explain decreased as the same FSP structure re-occurred. Reference to literature treating the phenomena occurring in the particular sentence was provided. Where a case of potentiality was identified, it was pointed out and justification for a decision one way or another was provided. Most of the examples from our corpus serve as an entry to further notes, explanations, and comments.

Each example in the corpus is embedded in a stretch of context as the contextual factor in assigning the FSP structure plays a highly important role. Following Firbas' procedure in the identification of FSP, we first examined the relationship of the existential construction to its immediately relevant context and established the context-dependent elements. Then we analysed the context-independent section and we assessed the relationship between the context-independent elements. (Firbas 1992: 100) Finally our FSP interpretation of the sentence was compared with its Czech equivalent. Czech translations of the literary works by professional translators were used. They served as a kind of supportive test confirming our interpretation as it is believed that a true translation of a text should contain the same structure concerning the dynamism of communicative units as the original. In some cases the Czech translation made us realize there is a double possible understanding of the FSP of the particular example, in other cases we identified the FSP structure of the English sentence does not correspond with the FSP structure of the translation – in such a case we pointed the fact out and suggested a translation that would correspond with the FSP of the original⁴¹.

At this place an important reflection needs to be pointed out. The present study aims at application of the FSP theory to literary texts. It is one of essential characteristics of language that the degree of potentiality (i.e. various possible interpretations, all plausible) is rather high. Moreover, we chose to work with highly literary language containing complex structures and to come to unequivocal reading of these is often complicated (if not impossible). On that account the author of this study considers the annotated corpus of excerpted examples – where crucial decisions and steps in the procedure of assigning the FSP structure of sentences are

⁴¹ Unexpectedly, not all Chesterton's stories have been translated into Czech and therefore some of the examples extracted from the Chesterton's book of detective stories (see Sources) do not contain corresponding translation. Fortunately, there are not very many.

explained – an essential part of this study, and hence references to the corpus (Appendix I) are often made.

It is also important to stress the fact that existential constructions in our sample were extracted both from narrative parts and dialogues of the literary works. Especially in dialogues the assignment of FSP structure to sentences is very intricate unless a spoken adaptation of the selected texts is taken into account. The factor of intonation is fundamental in dialogues as it can resolve cases of potentiality where factors of context, linearity and semantics are not sufficient for unequivocal interpretation of the communicative meaning of the particular sentence. Our corpus contains 54 instances of existential sentences extracted from dialogue, which account for 27% of the whole sample.

The obtained results were quantified and summarized in tables. One table contains 50 examples obtained from one literary work and all observed categories are recorded there. The four comprehensive tables (200 examples) are presented in Appendix II to provide access to the collected data, and hence make this study as transparent as possible.

Finally, each of the main sections of this study (e.g. Bare Existential Constructions – Syntactic Aspect) has its own appendix where the excerpted sentences are presented in groups according to the categories under examination.

8. Results

Out of the 200 examples there are 114 bare existential constructions (57% of the whole sample) and 86 (43%) existential constructions with adverbial(s). Out of these 86, 15 instances represent the extended presentation scale (17.4% of 86 existentials with adverbial(s)). Table 1 below summarizes the results:

Table 1

Type of Existential Construction			Number
Bare existential			114 / 57%
Existential with adverbial(s)	Extended Presentation Scale	15 (17.4% of 86)	86 / 43%
Total			200 / 100%

8.1. Bare existential construction

8.1.1. Syntacticosemantic Aspects

The question arises what is worth observing in a construction that is labelled as bare. As has been stated above, our approach is twofold: both the syntactic and FSP points of view are adopted. Observations on the level of syntax include examination of the noun phrase that realizes the notional subject (NS). Attention is paid to the head noun and its modification. If modified, the means of modification have been recorded. The following categories have been adopted: if the noun phrase (NP) consists of a determiner⁴² and a head noun alone, we speak of ‘simple NP’, cf.

31. There was a pause. (L45)

Such type of existential construction (i.e. comprising a simple NP) corresponds to what Quirk et al. call “bare existential (sometimes called ‘ontological’) sentence, which simply postulates

⁴² By ‘determiner’ we understand what Quirk et al. define as ‘central determiner’ with the exception of the quantitative determiner *enough* (explanation of this exclusion follows), i.e. *a/an, the, zero article, some/any*, possessive pronouns, relative determiners *whose* and *which*; interrogative determiners *what, which, whose*; negative determiners *no, neither*; the demonstrative determiners *this, that, these, those*; the universal determiners *every, each*; the non-assertive determiner *either* (1985: 255-257). Quantitative expressions as *half, all*, which are defined as predeterminers (257-261); postdeterminers, e.g. numerals (261-262); and other quantifiers (262-264) including the quantitative determiner *enough* (which Quirk et al. rank among central determiners) and expressions *other, another* (388-389) are considered as elements which apart from reference add semantic details (usually the notion of quantity) to the head noun. In this respect they behave rather as modifying adjectives and thus they together with the head noun constitute what we call a ‘complex NP’.

the existence of some entity or entities” and “has a simple clause structure *there + be + indefinite noun*”. (Quirk et al. 1985: 1406). Our conception of a bare existential sentence is somewhat broader since it includes structures where the head noun is modified, sometimes very heavily (see Table 4 below) and thus the definition of ‘simple postulation’ does not appear complete.

If the head noun is pre- and/or post-modified, we speak of ‘**complex NP**’, cf.

32. There were various small rustlings (F148)

Finally, if there are more head nouns than one (multiple NS), modified or not, we speak of ‘**compound NP**’, cf.

33. There had been no welcome home for the young squire, no festivities, no deputation, not even a single flower. (L8)

Table 2 below illustrates the representation of the three types in our sample of 116 bare existential constructions.

Table 2

Simple NP	Complex NP	Compound NP	Total
12 / 10.5%	94 / 82.5%	8 / 7%	114 / 100%

In the amount of 114 bare existential constructions, constructions where the notional subject is realized by a complex NP occur most often – 94 instances (82.5% of all bare existentials within the sample). Structures where the notional subject is realized by simple NPs rank second highest in the frequency of occurrence – 12 instances out of 114. A little less frequent are constructions with notional subject constituted by a compound NP – 8 instances out of 114.

Complex NPs being the most frequent in occurrence need to be analysed in more detail. Table 3 below illustrates the means of modification of the head noun occurring in the noun phrase in bare existential constructions.

Table 3

Type of modification	Number of instances
modification by prepositional phrase(s)	19 / 20.2%
modification by a clause	9 / 9.6%
modification by adjective/adjectives	6 / 6.4%
quantifier + head	5 / 5.3%
modification by a comparative	3 / 3.2%
modification by an infinitive	2 / 2.1%
complementation by an object	2 / 2.1%
modification by a participle	1 / 1.1%
modification by apposition	1 / 1.1%
modification by combination of several modifying means	46 / 48.9%
TOTAL	94 / 100%

Considering only the simple means of modification, i.e. modification only by adjective(s), modification only by prepositional phrase(s), etc., the most frequent type of modification in our sample of bare existentials appears to be modification by prepositional phrase(s) (18 instances out of 93), cf.

34. [...] there is no time for nonsense (Ch86)

35. [...] there would be nothing for it but to ask, and pry, and demand, without knowing what he wanted (G173)

It needs to be mentioned that among the 18 instances of modification by prepositional phrase(s) (invariably postmodification), there is a great potential towards ambiguity – the prepositional phrase can often be interpreted either as a postmodifying element or as an adverbial. The issue is discussed in detail below in the section that treats potentiality in FSP (see p. 74).

The second most frequent means of modification within our sample is clausal modification (9 instances out of 93), cf.

36. “There is no reason why you should give me anything.” (F121)

followed by modification by adjective(s) (6 instances out of 93), cf.

37. There was an unhappy silence (Ch91)

38. There were various small rustlings (F148)

and a noun phrase consisting of a quantifier and a head noun (5 instances out of 93), cf.

39. Are there two keys? (L31)

There are 2 instances of a notional subject comprising a gerund, cf.

40. There was no mistaking it. (L43)

41. [Oh, I felt, if it hadn't been for the pit, an them as runs the pit,] there had been no leaving me. (L44)

The gerund establishes a secondary predication comprising an object. We do not consider a noun phrase of this kind being a simple NP due to the fact that the head noun is complemented (due to its verbal character) which is in our view comparable to a head noun that is modified. Thus the two instances are considered as complex NPs.

The largest group consists of noun phrases where two or more types of modification are combined. In our sample of bare existential constructions almost half of the head nouns are modified by a combination of modifying means (in 94 instances – 46 items, i.e. 48.9% of all complex NPs within bare existentials). Table 4 below shows the most frequently occurring combinations.

Table 4

Type of modification	Number of instances
adjective/quantifier + prepositional phrase(s)	18
adjective + clause	6
adjective/quantifier + participle	6
adjective/quantifier + infinitive	3
prepositional phrase + clause	3
prepositional phrase + participle	2
prepositional phrase + infinitive	1
other	7
TOTAL	46

By far most frequent pattern appears to be the modification by combination of an adjective/quantifier and a prepositional phrase (the prepositional phrase can be further extended) (18 instances out of 46), cf.

42. There was even a remote relationship with the Drake family, (F106)

43. There was only one answer to a crisis of this magnitude (F102)

Modification by combination of an adjective and a clause (6 instances) as well as modification by combination of an adjective/quantifier and a clause (6 instances) rank second highest in frequency of occurrence in our sample, cf.

44. Was there some delicate way he could ask? (F142)

45. There were two eyes looking at him through the panic (G200)

Modification by combination of adjective/quantifier and infinitive was employed in 4 instances, cf.

46. There is only one thing to be done (L70)

For examples of other combinations of modification found in bare existential constructions, see Appendix IIIa).

8.1.1.1. Treatment of Participles

At this place it seems appropriate to comment on one type of modification that displays a certain degree of ambiguity, and that is the postmodification by means of a participle. Altogether there are 13 items comprising postmodification of a head noun by a participle (12 items comprising present participle, 1 item comprising a past participle), be it a bare existential construction or an existential construction with an adverbial. Where the present participle occurs, an ambiguity arises with respect to the interpretation of the participle as a part of the verb or as a modifying element within the noun phrase, cf.

47. There was half a moon shining, [...] (L49)

The participle may be understood as a constituent of past continuous tense as in the adduced example

The moon was shining and a light breeze was blowing as he set off home

or it may be interpreted as a modifying element, an alternative to the adduced example

The shining moon cast a cold light on the countryside.

The past participle displays the same kind of ambiguity, either as postmodification or as a constituent of the passive, cf

48. But there was still a wide space left in the middle for the lifting of stone and wood (G167)

The passive interpretation is plausible due to the fact that the version without existential *there* is possible (then there is no doubt that the participle is a component of the verb in its passive form)⁴³, cf.

A wide space was left in the middle for the lifting of stone and wood.

⁴³ The argument can be found in Dušková 1994: 264

The interpretation of the participle as a postmodifying element is equally plausible as can be attested by the interchangeability between the participle and a relative clause, cf.

*But there was still a wide space which was left in the middle for the lifting of stone and wood.*⁴⁴

In the present study all 13 participles (see Appendix IIIb) are viewed as postmodifying elements on the following grounds. All examples have been carefully selected as instances of existential sentence. Comprising a participle or not, they display a very strong implication of presentation⁴⁵ expressed through existential *there* + verb *be* which is in existential constructions perceived as a lexical verb (in contrast with the verb operating as an auxiliary in progressive tenses as well as in passive constructions) referred to as ‘existential’ *be* (Quirk et al. 1985: 1409 ff, see section 18.50) replaceable by the verb *exist* (Dušková 1994: 353). Moreover, the following arguments reinforced our interpretation of occurring participles as means of modification: in the example

49. Once there were candles, voices murmuring, and the touch of oil (G198)

the expression *voices murmuring* (in our interpretation *voices* constitute the head noun which is modified by the participle *murmuring*, admittedly it can be otherwise) can be substituted by a noun phrase *murmuring voices* where the modifying force of the participle emerges transparently, cf.

Once there were candles, murmuring voices, and the touch of oil.

Or in the example

⁴⁴ It was later pointed out to us that the verbal expression ‘be left’ seems lexicalised to such an extent that it stopped being perceived as *an auxiliary + participle* but rather it functions as one lexical unit meaning ‘remain’. In our analyses we treat the participle as a postmodifying element and the above-presented arguments were decisive for this resolution.

⁴⁵ Cf. Quirk et al., who comment, “The existential sentence has been described as ‘presentative’ in serving to bring something on to the discursal stage deserving our attention” (1985: 1408)

50. There were steps going down the stair (G192)

steps denoting an inanimate entity cannot *go* anywhere and thus the progressive interpretation of the participle was excluded. Finally, it needs to be mentioned that some participles were more likely to induce the interpretation ‘verbal action in progress’ than others and that the phenomenon of ambiguity between a modification and a component of a verb in participles appears to be scalar, i.e. one of degree rather than involving clear-cut categories.

8.1.1.2. Syntacticosemantic Aspects - Summary

So far we have dealt with bare existential constructions from the syntactic point of view. Let us sum up this area under examination. First, a comment on the amount of bare existentials within the whole sample of existential clauses. In our sample of 200 examples of existential sentences there occur 114 bare existential constructions, which accounts for 57% of the sample. In our attempt to explain the rather high frequency of bare existentials two important points must be recognised. First, the sample is a collection of sentences extracted from fiction. The character of literary language helps to understand choices made in stylistic means of expression. We think it safe to say that one of the accomplishments sought by a writer of literary prose is the creation of a dramatic effect. We believe that bare existential constructions appertain to the inventory of means through which a dramatic effect may be achieved. Sentences like

51. If only there aren't more strikes! (L47)

52. There was a pause (Ch98)

53. There were new curtains – and the carpets (F126)

create tension of expectation as the reader's attention is fully turned towards the presented phenomenon (in our examples towards *more strikes*, *a pause*, *new curtains and the carpets*). In example 51 the dramatic effect is heightened by the use of the exclamation mark. Variations of example 52 often appear; especially to evoke the atmosphere of sudden stillness following some emotional response of the characters involved (shock, surprise, compassion, etc.) or a dramatic pause before an action e.g.

54. There was a silence, and then a sudden cackle of almost childish laughter relieved the strain. (Ch57)

The second important point that needs to be brought up is the fact that a bare existential construction does not necessarily have to be ‘bare’ in the broad sense of the word. In our sample of 114 existentials, 94 constructions comprise a modified head noun out of which 46 constructions comprise a head noun that is rather heavily modified (several means of modification are combined), e.g.

55. There are two men standing outside this shop,” went on the blacksmith with ponderous lucidity, “good tradesmen in Greenford whom you all know, who will swear that they saw me from before midnight till daybreak and long after in the committee-room of our Revival Mission, which sits all night, we save souls so fast. (Ch92)

In fact, rather an extensive piece of information is put forward by the bare existential sentence above. The postmodifying participle constitutes a secondary predication comprising an adverbial of place, so apart from the introduction of two men into the narrative, there is information about what they are doing and where. Further postmodification by apposition reveals still more details about the men, viz. what they do for a living, where they live, what they did the day before, etc. It appears that bare existential sentences/clauses (viz. structures where there is no adverbial present in the main predication) are most often employed not only to introduce a phenomenon onto the discursal scene (or ‘postulate the existence of some entity’), but also they are often utilised to convey rather detailed additional information about the presented phenomenon by means of modification (postmodification mainly). To make further conclusions we would need to compare our findings with data from analyses of samples from another field of discourse, e.g. scientific writing⁴⁶. Our estimation would be that a literary sample as the one we have collected for the purpose of this study displays a higher frequency of bare existential constructions comprising a simple NP (the equivalent of

⁴⁶ There is a forthcoming diploma dissertation comparable to this study analysing scientific texts, see Dubec, P. “Syntactic and FSP Aspects of Existential Construction” (unpublished diploma dissertation), Charles University, Prague

ontological sentences as explained above) due to their power to create dramatic effect. In our sample they represent 6% (12 instances) of all existential constructions. The seemingly small number substantially increases when sentences comprising simple modification are figured in. Sentences where the head noun/pronoun is modified by a single prepositional phrase (*There was help at hand*), by a single adjective (*There was a longer silence*) the same as sentences with the subject noun phrase constituted by a quantifier and a head (*There aren't enough words*) appear to perform the same dramatic effect as pure bare existential sentences. After taking instances exemplified above into account, the number increases by 23 instances – altogether there are 35 instances carrying out what we have characterized as dramatic effect, which forms 17.5% of the whole of our sample.

The complex NP in bare existentials, on the other hand, would be employed to the same extent as in e.g. academic prose due to its capacity to convey a great deal of information within one structure. However, this is by no means conclusive and only by relating our results to results of analogous analyses carried out on samples from a different style of writing (academic prose, e.g.), may provide us with an insight into the utilisation of bare existential construction from the syntactic point of view. Bare existentials from the viewpoint of FSP will be discussed next.

8.1.2. FSP Structure

The main communicative purpose of an existential construction is believed to be the introduction of a phenomenon into the discourse. We need to add that it is an instrument for presenting a new phenomenon that is realized by a subject ('subject proper' or 'notional subject' in existential constructions). As the subject is normally positioned to the left of the verb, it is disposed to be thematic⁴⁷; a language needs to have some instruments for signalling a rhematic subject at its disposal. The existential construction is one of such instruments (for

⁴⁷ In his discussion on pronominalization, Bolinger illustrates the extremely high expectation of a subject to be thematic when he compares structures *he... John* and *him ... John*. He explains that the former is far more usual due to the expectation of topicality in subjects in contrast to objects that do not carry such an expectation. Following the same line of argument he comments that in the example *The moment he arrived, John was recognizable*, 'John' and 'he' are analysed to have the same referent since a new, unknown element is not expected in the position of the subject, thus 'John' is interpreted as a reintroduced thematic element which has already been established in the text. In the position of the subject "it is least likely to compel the interpretation 'someone else'." (1979: 305-306)

the list of all bare existential constructions and their FSP pattern see Appendix IIIc). This presupposes the subject proper is a context-independent element.

Among 114 bare existentials, 107 instances (93.9%) display the expected FSP pattern, viz. Theme – transition (=verb) – rheme: the notional subject constitutes the rheme, cf.

56. There was help at hand (G175)

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*help at hand*)⁴⁸

107 instances of the regular FSP pattern, viz. the notional subject constitutes the rheme (T – Tr – R/S) include 8 interrogative sentences/clauses, which are going to be discussed in due course.

7 instances display rhematic verb. Out of these, 4 contain thematic notional subject due to three different contextual circumstances (see discussion below). 3 contain not only a rhematic verb but also a rhematic notional subject.

Table 5

FSP PATTERN			Number of instances/ Percentage
T – Tr(V) – R(S)	Interrogative	8	107 / 93.9%
	Other	99	
T(S) – Tr/ R(V)	Second instance level	1	7 / 6.1%
	Answer to question	1	
	Thematic NS	2	
	Rhematic NS	3	
Total			114 / 100%

⁴⁸ The prepositional phrase *at hand* is interpreted as a postmodifying element, a semantic equivalent of 'immediate', cf. adduced variation of the sentence: *There was immediate help*.

8.1.2.1. T(S) – Tr/ R(V) Pattern

We will open our commentary on the results with a discussion regarding the pattern containing rhematic verb. In these structures, the transitional element (realized by the verb⁴⁹) enters either the rhematic or the thematic section and thus the verb implements two FSP functions at the same time.

Let us now examine circumstances in which sentences displaying T(S) – Tr/ R(V) pattern occur.

1. First, there is a special contextual circumstance when a sentence (in our case an existential sentence) functions at the so-called *second instance level*. Then all elements in the structure are context-dependent except one, which is “singled out for special attention (usually for the sake of heavy contrast) and functioning as a one-element rheme”(Firbas 1965: 175)⁵⁰. This happens, for example, when a sentence is repeated within a short span of text and in the repeated sentence one of the elements is carrying a contrast which makes that element momentarily context-independent. This is best to be illustrated by an example from our sample. What follows is one of possible interpretations and we realize there is a high degree of potentiality present. However, we believe the example can serve well as an illustration of what can be considered a second instance level. As the contextual factor is decisive in these cases, we present the example within a larger span of text; the two instances are indicated by a number in bold, cf.

56. “ The game-keeper, Mellors, is a curious kind of person,” she said to Clifford, “he might almost be a gentleman.”

“Might he?” said Clifford. “I hadn’t noticed.”

“(1) But isn’t there something special about him?” Connie insisted.”

“I think he’s a quite nice fellow, but I know very little about him. He only came out of the army last year, less than a year ago. From India, I rather think. He may have

⁴⁹ More precisely the transition is realized by the temporal and modal exponents of the finite verb = the TMEs (Firbas 1965: 170, 1992: 18) as we have already discussed above. In existential constructions the two components of verb, viz. the notional and the categorial component mostly merge.

⁵⁰ For a definition of the second instance level sentences see also Svoboda 1981: 4

picked up certain tricks out there, perhaps he was an officer's servant, and improved on his position. Some of the men were like that. But it does them no good, they have to fall back into their old place when they get home again."

Connie gazed at Clifford contemplatively. She saw in him the peculiar tight rebuff against anyone of the lower classes who might be really climbing up, which she knew was characteristic of his breed.

"But don't you think (2) there is something special about him?", she asked.

"Frankly, no! Nothing I had noticed." (L28)

In the first instance – most of sentences operate at this contextual level, which Svoboda calls *ordinary instance level* (Svoboda 1981: 4) – the verb fulfils the FSP role of transition, see the FSP pattern of the sentence:

But isn't there something special about him?

T (*there*)– **Tr** (*But isn't*) – **R** (*something special about him*)

In the second instance all elements are context-dependent but the verb⁵¹, which can be interpreted as a carrier of a contrast indicating the meaning: *But don't you think something special about him really exists?* In speech, the intonation nucleus would fall on the verb, cf. *But don't you think something there IS something special about him?* The verb enters the rhematic section while the rest of the elements have become thematic due to the context, i.e. due to the same sentence predecessor in the preceding text, cf. the FSP pattern:

[...] there is something special about him?

T (*there something special about him*) – **Tr/R** (*is*)

2. A similar contextual situation arises in an answer to a question, where the information known from the question is either repeated or (more often) ellipted and only one element (the

⁵¹ Any of the sentence elements may be singled out as momentarily rhematic, in example 56 it appears to be the verb.

one providing the reader/listener with the required information) is thus rhematic. In our sample, one such instance occurs, cf.

57. Was there some delicate way he could ask?

There was not. (F143)

Since the whole of the question is repeated (and the NS being so activated that it is understood without saying and consequently ellipted), the only new information brought into the communication is the negative particle ‘not’. In this circumstance the temporal exponent and the personal ending of the verb constitute the transition while the negative polarity constitutes the rheme, cf. the FSP pattern:

There was not.

Theme (*There*) – **Tr/R** (*was not*)

We treat the two above-illustrated contextual situations as two distinct ones, in which we follow Firbas who observes, “The second instance level sentence and answers to questions do not occur on the same level of contextual dependence. (This is borne out by the fact that questions themselves may pass into second instance [...]). Both, however, bring one element into a strikingly distinct relief.” (1965: 175).

In our sample there occurs one instance representing the second instance level sentence (example 1), and one instance concerning an answer to a question (example 2), in both it is the verb that is brought to the foreground, and hence functioning as the rheme.

3. Then there is a small group of two sentences that contain a context-dependent notional subject (without operating on the second instance level or being an answer to a question), and thus the verb having no successful competitors constitutes the rheme, cf.

58. “By George!” cried Flambeau; “here is the place, after all! Here is Reed Island, if ever there was one. Here is Reed House, if it is anywhere.” (Ch81)

TrPrO (*if ever*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*was*) – **diatheme** (*one*)

4. Finally, there are three sentences that contain rhematic verb and rhematic notional subject. The verb is contrasted and hence constitutes the rheme proper, cf.

59. “A person can’t be quite alone in a street a second before she receives a letter. She
(1) can’t be quite alone in a street when she starts reading a letter just received. (2)
There must be somebody pretty near her; he must be mentally invisible.” (Ch71)

In (2) the verb ‘must’ stands in contrast to the verb ‘can’t’ in (1) as well ‘alone’ is contrastive to ‘somebody near’. The two structures are parallel one to another and there is analogical distribution of CD: a person CAN’T be quite alone – there MUST be somebody pretty near her⁵².

To reconcile all the arguments and observations presented above, let us make a tentative conclusion closing the section on the T(S) – Tr/ R(V) pattern.

On the grounds of what has been presented above, it appears that four different contextual circumstances prompt such a pattern within an existential construction to arise. First, an existential construction operates at the second instance level (all elements are context-dependent but the verb), second, an existential construction constitutes an answer to a question (all elements are context-dependent but the verb), third, the notional subject is context-dependent and thus the verb having no successful competitor becomes foregrounded. Finally, the verb is contrasted and together with the NS of an existential construction it forms the rhematic section of the sentence within which the verb constitutes the rheme proper.

8.1.2.2. T – Tr(V) – R(S) Pattern

An overwhelming majority of bare existentials within our sample (107 instances / 93% out of 114 bare existentials) displays the regular FSP pattern, viz. T – Tr(V) – R(S). The result expectedly sustains the claim that the main function of a bare existential construction is one of

⁵² Compare with Czech translation, “Někdo *musel* být moc blízko u ní” where the interpretation of the verb (its TME) as a rhematized element (the rheme proper) is indicated by italics.

presentation and that the presented phenomenon (= the dynamic semantic role of the notional subject in these constructions) constitutes the rheme. At this point it seems important to examine the nature of the notional subject from the viewpoint of context dependence. Although invariably rhematic, perhaps it exhibits nuances that may reveal details about the nature of NS in bare existential constructions. As was suggested above, constructions displaying the regular FSP pattern will not comprise a context-dependent notional subject (in which case the verb loses its competitor⁵³, passes into the theme and the information structure gains the T(S) – Tr/R(V) character). At the same time our examination of the degree of contextual retrievability revealed that not all notional subjects in T – Tr – R(S) structures display complete context independence. Table 6 below shows the results:

Table 6

NS	Number of instances / percentage
Context-dependent	---
Heterogeneous	69 / 64.5%
Context-independent	38 / 35.5%
Total	107 / 100%

Out of 107 bare existentials displaying the T – Tr – R(S) pattern there are 69 constructions (64.5%) where the noun phrase constituting the NS comprises some context-dependent elements (= heterogeneous NS) and 38 constructions (35.5%) comprising only context independent elements (= context-independent NS). Example 60 below illustrates the former, example 61 the latter. In example 1 the head noun is constituted by a context-independent noun which is postmodified by means of a content nominal clause comprising context-dependent elements, viz. *he, her, her blindness*. In example 61 all elements in the NP constituting the NS are context-independent. The latter (illustrated by example 61) is by far less frequent in our sample than the former (example 60).

⁵³ The concept of competition in FSP terminology can be found in Firbas 1965, 1992: 41-66. The metaphor of competition is based on the centrality of the verb which either has successful competitors, i.e. elements that can override it in degree of CD, or not. Successful competitors of the verb constitute the rheme.

60. There was a pause, and the priest went on in a gentle and even broken voice. “Whether or not that devil deliberately made her blind, there is no doubt that he deliberately killed her through her blindness. [...]” (Ch98)

61. Dr. Grogan reached out and poked his fire. “We know more about the fossils out there on the beach than we do about what take place in that girl’s mind. There is a clever German doctor who has recently divided melancholia into several types. [...]” (F119)

Our observations can be squared with Dušková’s research concerning the role of definiteness in FSP. When examining themes and rhemes as far as contextual dependence is concerned, she observes, “*Givenness or newness (contextual boundness or non-boundness) of an item is [thus] rather a matter of degree than a strict dichotomy. It constitutes a separate level distinct from the theme-rheme structure. This is evident from the fact that although new items are predisposed to function in the rhematic section and given items as thematic elements, in the case of composite themes and rhemes new and given items are often intermingled. In general, in the text under study, intermingling of new and given items is more characteristic of the rheme than of the theme. This is in fact the predominant type of the rheme*” (1999: 292-3)⁵⁴. We can add that our examination of heterogeneity in rhemes revealed that it might be achieved through a variety of means, the following are frequent ones:

A/ context-dependent head noun + context-independent modification, cf. example 62 with ellipted head noun

62. There are some men who are consoled by the idea that there are women less attractive than their wives; and others who are haunted by the knowledge that there are more attractive. (G131)

B/ semantically incomplete head noun + specifying modification comprising context-dependent elements, cf.

⁵⁴ The underlining is mine; it highlights the outcome most relevant for the present study.

63. [...] but there were other ways she could get to her house (G163)

64. There's something I have to do. (G172)

C/ context-independent negative determiner + context-dependent head noun/NS, cf. example 66 below

D/ context-independent focalizer + context-dependent head noun/NS, cf. example 65 below.

Upon closer examination of information structure within heterogeneous NS in T – Tr –R, we find that even though it includes some context-dependent elements, the concept that it expresses is new for the reader; it is introduced anew as the whole, cf.

65. There was a curious warning pleading in his voice (L39)

In T – Tr – R(S) structures, if a notional subject expressing a concept already known occurs, there is a strong indication that marks the NS as a carrier of the highest degree of CD: either by means of a focalizer, cf.

66. There is only this one canoe (Ch87)

or by means of a negative determiner, cf.

67. Though Connie did want children: if only to fortify her against her sister-in-law Emma. But early in 1918 Clifford was shipped home smashed, and there was no child. (L6)

As for the focalizer, it signals the rheme and thus even though the following NS is context-dependent, the focalizer raises it into the rhematic section (see example 66 above where ‘this

one canoe' is contextually bound and focalizer 'only' meaning 'this one and not any other' elevates it into the rheme).

As for the negative determiner (= negative focus anticipator NegFocA⁵⁵) it "is usually rhematic signalling a special kind of contextual dependence" (Firbas 1965: 174)⁵⁶. In 4 instances out of 17 negative NPs (displaying heterogeneous NS in T – Tr – R(S) structures), the head is context-dependent⁵⁷ and the negative constitutes the rheme proper (together they constitute a heterogeneous NS). In the rest of the instances⁵⁸, the NS displays a small degree of contextual dependence that derives either from hints in the preceding context or from a broader situation into which it is embedded.

8.1.2.3. Focalizer

Let us make a note on the occurrence of focalizers (for list of sentences comprising a focalizer see Appendix IIIe). There are 10 instances comprising a focalizer within our sample of 200 existential constructions, 9 occurrences of focalizers among bare existentials and 1 among existentials with adverbial. In 6 instances the focalizer immediately precedes the rheme (cf. example 68 below), in 2 instances it stands between a modal/auxiliary and the main verb (cf. example 69) and in 1 instance it is set within an extensive rhematic section where it signals the rheme proper (cf. example 70) again immediately preceding it.

68. There was **even** (focalizer) **a remote relationship with the Drake family** (rheme)
(F106)

69. a/ [...] till there had **even** (focalizer) **come a whisper of insanity** (rheme). (Ch89)
b/ There might **even** (focalizer) **be real men** (rheme) in the next phase (L29)

⁵⁵ See footnote 32

⁵⁶ Indeed, the concept that is being negated needs to have been introduced into the discourse earlier or its existence is presupposed (and thus activated in reader's/listener's mind) before it can be negated, at least this is how we understand the concept of 'signalling a special kind of contextual dependence' by a negative particle/determiner.

⁵⁷ See examples 6, 32, 34, and 44 in our analysis, Appendix III d

⁵⁸ For the list of the negative bare existential constructions (displaying T – Tr – R pattern) see Appendix III d

70. [...] there is **something rather dangerous standing on these high places even**
 (focalizer) **to pray** (rheme proper) (Ch94)

There are 4 expressions functioning as focalizers found within our sample, viz. *only* (4 instances), *even* (4 instances), *just* (1 instance), *first of all* (1 instance). In our sample, the focalizer *even* displays highest variability in sentence position. Table 7 summarizes the results:

Table 7

Expression	Position	Number
Just	Immediately preceding the rheme	1
Only	Immediately preceding the rheme	4
Even	Immediately preceding the rheme	1
	Between modal/auxiliary and the main verb	2
	Within the rheme signalling the rheme proper	1
First of all	Immediately preceding the rheme	1

The position immediately preceding the focused item has been generally acknowledged to be the most frequent one (Dušková 1994: 473) and also the one causing least ambiguity regarding the item in focus (Quirk et al. 1985: 605-606). Where the focalizer resumes a position different from the one immediately preceding the focused item, a space for ambiguity may develop. In speech, intonation clearly resolves it, in writing contextual circumstances usually indicate what item is brought into the foreground by the focalizer (Quirk et al. 1985: 606). This is certainly true of the example 69 b/ above (for the context see our analysis, Appendix I), however two possible readings of what item(s) may be interpreted as the focused one(s) have been identified in the example 69a/. First, the focalizer highlights only the noun phrase; second, the noun phrase is highlighted along with the main verb that gains prominence due to

the presence of the focalizer immediately in front of it (the context and commentary regarding this particular focalizer to be found in our analysis, Appendix I).

As far as types of expressions are concerned, *first of all* primarily functions as a linking element, i.e. a means of connecting sentences into a larger whole and thus facilitating the organization of a text⁵⁹ while the rest of the expressions function primarily as focusing adverbs.

Finally, it should not escape our attention that in 8 instances out of 10 the focalizer immediately precedes the item in focus. We might seek an explanation in the attempt to avoid ambiguity, an observation which is perhaps underpinned by the fact that our sample consists of examples extracted from literary language created by authors such as William Golding or D. H. Lawrence and where (unless used deliberately and in a pre-thought way to achieve a desired effect in the reader) potential ambiguities in interpretation would be skilfully avoided.

8.1.2.4. Preliminary Notes on FSP Treatment of Questions

Before the presentation and subsequent discussion of the results, we need to introduce the issue of questions into the framework of FSP. Questions present a specific problem on the level of functional sentence perspective. It concerns the prosodic means of FSP, specifically the congruence between the rheme proper and the intonation nucleus. When approaching the information structure in a question, linguists need to consider what part stands for the rheme proper. Mathesius (in Hajičová 1976: 300, fn. 3) observed that in a *wh*-question, the *wh*-expression represents the rheme proper since it stands for the information that is unknown to the inquirer. The rest of the question is then thematic since it is presupposed, cf.

71. But who was there in those hardly inhabited flats to murder anybody? (Ch96)

⁵⁹ It is not unusual that a primarily linking expression functions as a focalizer, for example *also, again, equally*, etc. (Dušková 1994: 474). There is a monograph on focusing expressions, see König 1991. For a detailed treatment and classification of focusing adverbs (focusing subjuncts in their terminology) see Quirk et al. 1985: 604-612.

Anyone who asks the question above is aware of the fact that there was a murder and that it took place in 'hardly inhabited flats'. In *yes-no* questions it is the polarity that represents the rheme proper as it also points towards the information unknown to the inquirer, the rest of the question (as well as in *wh*-questions) is presupposed and thus thematic, cf.

72. [...] is there any foundation to the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby? (L42)

When the questions are confronted with their respective replies, the information covering the question word constitutes the rheme proper in a reply to a *wh*-question and the same applies to the polarity of the finite verb in a reply to a *yes-no* question. Mathesius' view was adopted by Křížková (1968). The problem of such interpretation rests in the fact that the supposed rheme proper of a question does not necessarily coincide with the intonation nucleus: in neutral (unmarked) *wh*-questions it does not occur on the question word, in neutral *yes-no* questions it does not coincide with the finite verb. This was pointed out by Daneš (1949 in Firbas 1974: 31, fn. 69)⁶⁰. Following the same line of argument and strongly believing that the prosodic factor is firmly established in the system of means that enable to assess the information structure of a sentence, Jan Firbas examined the problem further. He suggested that in order to understand the information structure of a question (and in consequence its meaning in the act of communication), "not only the speaker's point of view, but also that of the listener (the prospective informant) must be taken into account" (Firbas 1974:31). This new viewpoint helps us realize that a question fulfils two principal functions in communication and that is first the indication of what information the inquirer needs (the question word in *wh*-questions/the finite verb in *yes-no* questions) and second the indication from what perspective is the respective answer to be approached. It is the second function that is accompanied by the intonation centre and that establishes the rheme proper of the question. "In accordance with

⁶⁰ Křížková was aware of the incongruence between the prosodic and non-prosodic means of FSP. She offered an explanation on rhythmical grounds with the remark that "the placement of intonation nucleus in questions is more or less mechanical and it has nothing to do with FSP" (1968: 202). The problem of FSP in questions was also examined by Hajičová (1976) who focused on *wh*-questions. She also observes that in unmarked questions the intonation nucleus can be placed either on the *wh*-word (and then in her view the rest of the question is context-dependent) or it can fall on the "last lexical unit of the question" (303) and then this unit constitutes the rheme proper of the question. Further she explores the ways of identifying degrees of CD in other question constituents and she comes to a conclusion that the identification complies with the same criteria as in declarative structures.

the requirements of the context, any element within the question may become the rheme proper. The offered solution establishes a coincidence between the bearer of the intonation centre (the most important prosodic feature) and the bearer of rheme proper” (ibid). Elaborating on this line of inquiry further, Firbas pointed out that the question word actually points to the rheme proper the same way as focusing adverbs or the negative particle/determiner. Consequently he assigns the question word the FSP role of ‘question focus anticipator, QFocA’ and at the same time the element presenting the angle from which to approach the potential reply constitutes the rheme proper⁶¹. In *yes-no* questions, the FSP roles of focus anticipator and transition are telescoped into one and performed by the verb (1992: 97-102).

8.1.2.4.1. Questions – Results

In our sample 9 questions occur out of which 8 rank among bare existentials⁶². Altogether there are 4 *wh*-questions (out of which there is 1 instance of an existential construction with an adverbial) and 5 *yes-no* questions. Apart from the main *yes-no* question category, there are two subcategories, viz. declarative *yes-no* question (1 instance) and rhetorical *yes-no* question (1 instance). Table 8 summarizes the results:

Table 8

Type of existential construction	Type of question			
	Wh-Questions	Yes/No Questions	Declarative Yes/No Questions	Rhetorical Yes/No Question
Bare existential	3	3	1	1
Existential with adverbial	1	0	0	0

⁶¹ Focus anticipators are by nature rhematic and that is also the reason why the second element is referred to as the rheme proper, which is a category relevant only when the rhematic section comprises more components.

⁶² For the list of all questions and their FSP patterns go to Appendix IIIf

Let us now demonstrate the application of Firbasian approach to assessing the FSP structure in questions on two examples of interrogative existential constructions, a *wh*-question (example 73) and a *yes-no* question (example 74):

73. But it was all a dream [...] No substance to her or anything.... no touch, no contact!
Only this life with Clifford, this endless spinning of webs of yarn, of the minutiae of consciousness, these stories Sir Malcolm said there was nothing in, and they wouldn't last. Why should there be anything in them, why should they last? (L18)

The question word signals interrogativity and points towards the rheme proper in that it activates the reader's attention and creates the atmosphere of anticipation of what is to come. The rheme proper is constituted by the carrier of the piece of information that tells the addressee from what angle he/she is expected to provide the required answer. For example, the form *Why?* alone is not sufficient for the addressee to understand what to reply, he/she needs to be told *Why* (QFocA)– what (rheme proper). The rheme proper (and consequently the FSP of the question) is then determined “by the same laws of interplay as the FSP of a declarative sentence. Any element of the question can convey the RhPR (question focus) provided it is not prevented from doing so by a successful competitor”. (Firbas 1992: 98)

In the sentence above (example 73) the verb operates as a transitional element between the thematic section (*there*) and rhematic section (*why anything in them*). The notional subject realized by the indefinite pronoun (*anything*) stands in contrast to the indefinite pronoun (*nothing*) from the preceding sentence and as such is a carrier of an intonation nucleus of the whole and constitutes the rheme proper of the question⁶³, cf. the FSP pattern below:

QFocA (Why) – **transition** (should)– **theme** (there) – **rest of transition** (be) – **rheme proper** (anything) – **rest of the rheme** (in them)

⁶³ In our interpretation, the prepositional phrase syntactically functions as postmodification and thus on the FSP level it constitutes one unit together with its head. The issue of prepositional phrases following a head is discussed below, see pp. 77-81

74. “Do you lock the hut when you’re not here?”

“Yes, your Ladyship.”

“Do you think I could have a key too, so that I could sit here sometimes?”

Are there two keys?” (L31)

In the *yes-no* question above (74) the verb fulfils both the role of focus anticipator and transition. The noun phrase comprises a numerative and a head noun that is context-dependent (see the preceding question ‘*Do you think I could have a key too [...]?’*) and thus it is the numerative constitutes the rheme proper, cf.

QfocA/Transition (Are) – **theme** (there) – **rheme proper** (two) – **rest of the rheme** (keys)⁶⁴

8.1.2.4.2. *Questions – Summary*

In FSP analyses of questions (above) we have tried to apply the Firbasian approach that takes both the inquirer’s and the informant’s perspective into consideration. The category of QfocA seems particularly useful: though in its nature rhematic, its main FSP function is to point towards the rheme proper which is then identified by means of an interplay of linearity, semantics, context and intonation.

8.2. *Existential construction with adverbial(s)*

In our sample of 86 existential constructions with adverbials there occur 46 sentences/clauses with an adverbial placed finally, 14 sentences/clauses with an adverbial placed initially, and 8

⁶⁴ The illustration of the FSP pattern as we chose it is a little misleading in that it shows the rheme proper and the rest of the rheme as 2 units. In fact, phrases *anything in them* and *two keys* function as one unit. The scheme is to show explicitly the rheme proper of the distributional field. In our analyses, however, we preferred the following depiction: **Transition** (Are) – **theme** (there) – **rheme** (two keys)?

↓
rheme proper

The label ‘**rest of the rheme**’ was used in patterns where discontinuous postmodification is involved, e.g. **Theme proper** (there) – **transition** (is) – **rheme** (a long seat) – **diatheme** (there under the veranda) – **rest of the rheme** (where we can smoke out of the rain)

sentences/clauses with an adverbial in medial position. Moreover, there are 18 sentences/clauses that comprise more than one adverbial (out of these, 16 sentences contain 2 adverbials, and 2 sentences contain 3 adverbials)⁶⁵. Table 9 below summarises the results:

Table 9

Existential construction with adverbial(s)	Position	Initial	Medial	Final	More Adverbials	Total
		Number of instances	14 16.3%	8 9.3%	46 53.5%	18 20.9%

An adverbial identified as **initial** stands in the position preceding existential *there*, cf.

75. On one day (Adv) there was a long excursion to Sidmouth (F113)

Medial adverbial is such an adverbial that follows the verb and at the same time precedes the subject noun phrase, cf.

76. [...] there lay behind him (Adv) all those years of thought, speculation, self-knowledge. (F140)

Our criterion for a **final** adverbial is to occupy the position following the head of the subjective noun phrase. There are two alternatives complying with the criterion. First, the adverbial follows both the head and its modification, cf. example 77

77. There came a sharp scream (NS) from by the south west pillar (Adv) (G164)

Second, the adverbial is placed after the head noun of the NS but it is followed by an element postmodifying the head and hence a discontinuous postmodification arises, cf. example 78

⁶⁵ All existential sentences/clauses with adverbial(s) are listed (including the FSP role of the adverbial(s)) in the Appendix IIIg.

78. There is talk_(NS) in the town_(Adv) of committing you to an institution_(NS). (F135)

In our sample, out of 62 final adverbials 18 appear in the position following the head but preceding either the postmodification or a conjoint in a multiple NS (2 instances), cf.

79. There was sinful pride_(NS) in that_(Adv), but also loyalty and service_(NS). (G161)

In these 18 examples where the scene-setting element precedes the postmodifying one, the FSP principle overrides the grammatical principle. The grammatical ordering of elements prompts the postmodifying element immediately to follow its head noun and the conjoints of a multiple notional subject to occur together (linked either asyndetically or with a conjunction) without any disrupting element in between them. The FSP principle prompts the informationally most dynamic element to be placed finally, which is the underlying force in the arrangement of elements in the two examples above: the postmodification *committing you to an institution* and conjoints *loyalty and service* carry the highest degree of CD.

Each of the categories (viz. initial, medial, final) will be discussed in detail and attention will be also paid to sentences comprising more adverbials. Let us now relate the results to what is generally assumed about adverbials in existential constructions and discuss some interesting facts revealed by the figures. First, tables with results regarding the position and the FSP function⁶⁶ of adverbials need to be presented. Table 10 shows sentences with one adverbial according to the position of the adverbial. Each position (initial, medial, final) is then split into subcategories according to the dynamic semantic functions of the adverbial in the particular position. Each of these subcategories shows the number of respective instances.

⁶⁶ In the tables we present the dynamic semantic functions of adverbials. As has already been explained, in existential constructions the dynamic semantic role of setting relates to the FSP function of theme and the dynamic semantic role of specification relates to the rheme proper.

Table 10 Sentences with one adverbial

Position	Number	FSP	Number	Total
Initial	14	Setting	10	68
		TrPrO	4	
Medial	8	Setting	6	
		TrPrO	2	
Final	46	Setting	35	
		TrPrO	1	
		Specification	10	

Table 11 below applies to sentences where more than one adverbial occurred. In 18 sentences/clauses (15 sentences with 2 adverbials, 3 sentences with 3 adverbials), there is a total of 39 adverbials. These are then shown according to the same key as adverbials in table 10.

Table 11 Sentences with more adverbials

Position	Number	FSP	Number	Total
Initial	13	Setting	4	38
		TrPrO	9	
Medial	10	Setting	5	
		TrPrO	4	
		Specification	1	
Final	15	Setting	11	
		TrPrO	0	
		Specification	4	

Finally, all occurring adverbials in our sample, their position and dynamic semantic roles are summarized in Table 12 below.

Table 12 Total of all adverbials

Position	Number	FSP	Number	Total
Initial	27 / 25.5%	Setting	14	106 / 100%
		TrPrO	13	
Medial	18 / 17%	Setting	11	
		TrPrO	6	
		Specification	1	
Final	61 / 57.5%	Setting	46	
		TrPrO	1	
		Specification	14	

8.2.1. Final adverbial

Occurrence of adverbials in existential sentences is usually ascribed to the need of expressing a background against which a phenomenon is presented, cf.

80. There was a cloth on the pavement at his feet _(Set), and he scraped carefully at the lump of stone. (G153)

Here a phenomenon (*a cloth*) is introduced into the narrative and the adverbial (*on the pavement at his feet*) depicts the scene in which the phenomenon is set⁶⁷.

In such cases, the adverbial usually appears in final position in the sentence and after existential *there* (which is by nature informatively the least dynamic element and constitutes the theme proper of the whole) carries the lowest degree of CD (Dušková 1998: 37, 1999a: 257).⁶⁸ The adverbial then operates in the FSP role of diatheme (= carries the highest degree of

⁶⁷ In the example 80 above, interestingly, the whole existential construction is employed to describe a scene on the background of which an action [scraping at a lump of stone] is presented. It serves to describe scenery in a narrative; it presents a phenomenon which immediately becomes a part of a larger scene as the adjacent clause is perspectived towards an action (set on the background depicted by the existential construction).

⁶⁸ See also Firbas who in a discussion of presentation sentences (sentences comprising a verb of existence/appearance on the scene) comments on the nature of an adverbial, "Under the circumstances, i.e. in the case of the most natural use of the structure, the adverbial element carries known information (derivable, recoverable from the preceding context) and is in consequence contextually dependent." (1974: 18)

CD within the thematic section) and in the dynamic semantic role of a setting. In our sample in the existential sentences with one final adverbial, out of 46 adverbials in final position 35 are thematic functioning as a setting. In the sentences where more adverbials than one occur (18 instances), out of 38 adverbials 15 were found in the final position and out of these 11 function as scene-setting elements. In the total of 106 adverbials, 62 (58.5%) occur in the final position and out of these 46 (75.4% of all final adverbials) constitute the scene of the existential sentence. As for the static semantics, 39 of final adverbials performing the dynamic semantic role of a setting are adjuncts of place, then 6 adjuncts of time occur, and 1 adjunct of respect (cf. *There was a kind of a childish security in looking at the game*, see Appendix I, example 174).

Our results thus confirm that an adverbial in an existential construction is mostly placed finally and on the FSP level it operates in the thematic section in the dynamic semantic role of a setting. Strong inclination of an adverbial in an existential construction to constitute a scene on the background of which a phenomenon is presented is borne out when all adverbials are taken into consideration, i.e. regardless of their position; out of 106 adverbials in our sample, 71 (67% of all adverbials) operate within thematic section as scene-constituting elements. Out of these, 51 adjuncts of place, 19 adjuncts of time, and 1 adjunct of respect occur.

Final adverbials functioning in other dynamic semantic role than a setting are of considerable interest: final adverbials as transition-proper oriented elements and final adverbials in the role of specification⁶⁹.

There is one instance of final adverbial functioning as a transition-proper oriented element, cf.

81. there are the rococo excrescences – yourselves, let us say (TrPrO) (Ch62)

⁶⁹ Here we are confronted with a lexical gap in FSP terminology: the terms ‘transition’ and ‘specification’ are applied both on the level of FSP roles (viz. theme, transition, rheme, specification) and on the level of dynamic semantic roles (viz. setting, transition, presented phenomenon, specification). The term ‘specification’ is of primary interest. On the level of FSP roles it denotes an element that exceeds the rheme (the presented phenomenon) in the degree of CD, on the level of dynamic semantic roles it denotes an element that specifies circumstances under which a phenomenon is presented and this specification is so informationally loaded that it moves the communication in the sentence a step forward, i.e. the sentence is perspectived towards this specifying element.

Firbas understands sentence adverbs (in the example above style disjunct⁷⁰) as elements functioning primarily in transitional section (1992: 77-8). In the example above, the adverbial is detached from the rest of the existential clause by a comma and thus the relationship between the verb and the adverbial is loose; an argument that suggests the adverbial is not a successful competitor of the verb (as in cases when it obligatorily complements it). Also it can be agreed that the existential clause is not perspectived towards the adverbial (interpretation of the adverbial as the carrier of the most important information in the whole seems implausible). In consequence it cannot be interpreted as being rhematic. On the other hand, it is context-independent and obviously it does not function in the dynamic semantic function of a setting. It is an element more dynamic than the thematic existential *there* and at the same time it is less communicatively important than the NS, and thus we subscribe to Firbas' view and treat it as a transition proper oriented element, i.e. an element entering together with the verb "into the development of communication after the foundation (theme) has been laid" (op. cit., 78).

8.2.2. Extended Presentation Scale

Perhaps a more interesting case is presented by final adverbials in the FSP role of rheme (dynamic semantic function of specification). There are 14 such adverbials found in our sample (about 23% of all final adverbials). In 10 instances there is only one adverbial in the sentence present and invariably it is placed finally after the whole of NS, in 4 instances the final adverbial is accompanied by another adverbial, out of these there are 2 sentences/clauses where the other adverbial(s) function(s) in another FSP role(s) than specification (again the specifying adverbial occupies the final position following the whole of the NS) and 1 sentence where there are two final specifying adverbials (one following the head of the subject noun phrase, the other placed after the whole of NS including the postmodification).

Semantically, the existential sentence comprising an adverbial in the FSP role of specification signifies the extended presentation scale where a phenomenon is presented, but the development of the communication is not completed (as in common presentation structures): it

⁷⁰ Disjuncts are defined as adverbial elements not integrated into the sentence structure but in scope extending over a sentence as a whole (Quirk et al. 1985: 613). Style disjuncts then comment on how contents of the clause to which they are attached are conveyed, e.g. *If I may say so without offence, your writing is immature.* (example in Quirk et al. 1985: 615)

is moved forward towards the adverbial that carries some important specifying information and exceeds the presented phenomenon (realized by the notional subject) in the degree of CD, cf.

82. Oh, if only there were other men to be with (presented phenomenon), to fight that sparkling electric Thing outside there, to preserve the tenderness of life, the tenderness of women, and the natural riches of desire (Spec) (L38)

Here the concept of *other men to be with* is introduced into the narrative and then it is specified; a phenomenon appears on the narrative scene and then the purpose of its existence is explained.

Let us now discuss the circumstances (grammatical, semantic, contextual) under which the extended presentation scale was employed in our sample (for the list of all sentences displaying the extended presentation scale including the dynamic semantic roles of adverbials, see Appendix IIIh).

Firstly, a degree of CD carried by the final adverbial is signalled as higher than that carried by the notional subject by the complexity of the adverbial phrase. In such a case the adverbial involves a lot of new information about the phenomenon presented (the details may be temporal, locative or other), cf.

83. There is a place (presented phenomenon), [or there was before your day], on the south side of the choir (Spec), where the sun comes in, between some old bishop and the Provoste Chantry (Spec) (G154)

Here the two adverbials specify the position of *a place* and by providing the details about where it is to be found, they move the communication a step further than the presentation alone. It is worth noticing that the complexity of the adverbial is usually accompanied by

semantic incompleteness of the head in the subject noun phrase. The final adverbial then appears to complete the missing information. Cf. a similar example of this sort (and also see the example offered in the introduction to illustrate the structure of the extended presentation scale),

84. There's a kinship (presented phenomenon) among men who have set by a dying fire and measured the worth of their life by it (Spec). (G187)

Secondly, the adverbial acquires a higher degree of CD than the NS due to contextual boundness of the head in the subject noun phrase, cf.

85. I believe the force in that blow was just the force there is in earthquakes (Spec), and no force less. (Ch93)

In the examples above (85) the head of the subject noun phrase is constituted by an omitted relative *that*. The relative pronoun repeats the notion expressed by the antecedent *the force*. In consequence the relative is thematic (of course, the omission alone signals context-dependence par excellence) and the adverbial becomes the only successful competitor of the verb as it is context-independent and it completes the information structure of the existential clause. We need to note that the context-dependence of the NS in these examples is tied in with the grammatical construction in which they occur (i.e. relative adjectival clause)⁷¹.

Thirdly, the adverbial is interpreted as more informationally loaded than the NS when it changes the meaning of the existential clause into which it is incorporated. Three such instances occur in our sample, cf.

86. there was no ultimate exit at all except through this front door, which was guarded by Ivan and the armoury (Spec) (Ch54)

⁷¹ For more comments on the grammar of the clauses, see our analysis in Appendix I)

87. There was a distinct stir in his loins _(Spec). (F136)

In example 86 the adverbial cancels the negation by means of its semantic contents of exception. In example 87 it determines the way the NS (*stir*) is interpreted since only the meaning of the adverbial puts across the information that some kind of sexual sensation is involved. This is best illustrated when we compare the meaning of the same sentence with another adverbial of place, cf. the adduced example: *There was a distinct stir in his stomach*. Here not only the location of *the stir* is changed, but also the meaning of the whole sentence – which now suggests perhaps gastric unease, but definitely nothing of sexual sensation – is shifted. See a similar example where the meaning of the sentence changes due to the context-independent final adverbial

88. There was thunder in the offing _(Set), as in his heart _(Spec). (F127)

Next, an adverbial is interpreted as the element carrying the highest degree of CD when it is brought into contrast with another element present in the immediately relevant context and as such it is interpreted as a carrier of the most important information (the example below contains a specifying adverbial in medial position; it is the only medial adverbial functioning as specification found in our sample), cf.

89. There never _(Spec) have been more than fifteen waiters at this place _(Set) (Ch60) and
there were no more than fifteen to-night _(Spec) (Ch61)

Here the specifying adverbials (*never* – *to-night*) are in contrast with one another and moreover both of the notional subjects although rhematic display a degree of context dependence (for a larger stretch of context, see our analysis, Appendix I). Any sentence element can be brought into the momentary contrast and it is an event accompanied by prominence in intonation (we have encountered it in second instance sentences).

Finally, our sample contains examples of presentation scale in which the adverbial is neither contrasted, nor it is complex. The meaning of presentation is very pronounced yet the adverbial is communicatively more dynamic than the NS due to its semantic contents which may be amplified by contextual environment, cf.

90. there are gallows everywhere _(Spec) (G169)

91. For there had been no rain for a week _(Spec) (G160)

The sentence above (example 91) was introduced into the narrative to announce that a significant change in weather occurred (there were gloomy and steady rains before, see a larger stretch of text in which the sentence is set in our analysis in the Appendix I). The new information is carried by the negative and then the communication is completed by the adverbial. The sentence then can be interpreted as ‘There had not been rain for all week; a remarkable change compared to the prior weather conditions characterized by incessant rainfall’.

Static semantic roles of adverbials occurring as specification in the extended presentation scale are varied. Surprisingly, the adverbial of place functioning as specification appears most often (8 instances). Then there are 3 instances of adverbial of time (4 if the adverbial of frequency in the medial position is added), 2 instances of adverbial of purpose, and 1 case of adverbial of exception. Table 13 below summarizes the results:

Table 13

Final Adverbials in Extended Presentation Scale	Static semantics	place	time	purpose	exception	Total
	Number of instances	8	3	2	1	14

Summary

The number of occurrences of the extended presentation scale though not high is certainly not negligible (7.5% of all 200 existential sentences display the extended presentation scale). It

appears to be employed in order to provide two informational peaks in one structure. First, a phenomenon is presented and then specification of some sort (temporal, locative, or other) regarding the phenomenon presented follows. Examination of the sentences displaying the extended presentation scale showed that, as already suggested, the factors determining the nature of adverbial specification cannot be sought solely in the static semantics of adverbials. Our sample suggests that some static semantic roles may contribute to our perception of an adverbial as a specifying one more forcefully than others, for example the adverbial of exception or the adverbial of purpose. The adverbial of exception by its nature alters the previous meaning and hence brings new information into the communication. The adverbial of purpose completes the development of communication by explaining the intentions related to the presented phenomenon. As we have shown above, not all adverbials are so semantically pronounced (the static semantic role are meant) as to unequivocally signal the FSP role of specification. A question arises in what respects a specifying adverbial is different from an adverbial constituting a setting? In other words, how does, for example, a context-independent adverbial of place in the FSP role of specification differ from a context-independent adverbial of place in the FSP role of setting? In most general terms it may be claimed that interplay of all FSP factors is involved in signalling the specifying character of a final adverbial. Our observations suggest that the following aspects play a role.

1. The context dependence of the NS and the context independence of the final adverbial provide for the most unequivocal interpretation of the adverbial as a specification. Grammatical/structural reasons may underlie such contextual situation (examples 85). In these instances the presentation of a new phenomenon as the main function of existential construction is subdued. While in other examples of extended presentation scale the first information peak is performed by the notional subject, the second by the adverbial, in these two examples the first information peak is performed by the verb, and hence the state of existence is brought to prominence which is then completed by the adverbial (= the second information peak). The question remains whether to consider such structures as instances of extended presentation scale since there is not much of presentation in them. Rather it appears that since the existential construction is so tied in with a verb of existence, it is also selected when the verb of existence needs to be emphasised.

2. Next, the extended presentation scale arises where the adverbial is contrasted and the NS displays a degree of context dependence (example 89). The notional subject in these structures carries a high degree of CD but due to the contrast placed on the adverbial it is exceeded by the contrasted element (the adverbial).

3. It appears that the semantics of the NS plays a role in the way the final context-independent adverbial is interpreted. We have observed that semantic incompleteness of the head can be balanced by the final adverbial that provides specification to otherwise rather general notions expressed by the notional subject (examples 83, 84).

4. The semantics of the final adverbial appears to be significant for interpreting the adverbial as a specifying one. Due to its semantic contents it either alters meaning of the whole existential clause (examples 86, 87, 88) or it provides information that takes the communication a step further than the presentation alone (examples 90, 91).

Interestingly, the NS displays a gradual rise in context independence from completely context-dependent (situation 1 above) to partially context-dependent (situation 2 above) to completely context-independent (situations 3 and 4).

8.2.3. Medial Adverbial

A medial adverbial occurs in three dynamic semantic roles, viz. setting, transition-proper oriented element, and specification. There is only 1 instance of medial adverbial constituting the rheme proper of the whole (specification) due to the contrast it carries; the instance was discussed above (see example 89). Out of the total of 18 medial adverbials (17% of all adverbials), 11 (about 61% of all medial adverbials) function as settings and 6 (about 33% of all medial adverbials) as transition-proper oriented elements. Transition-proper oriented elements are usually realized by adverbs of frequency whose position is primarily medial, hence it is conditioned grammatically, not functionally, cf.

92. [...] there were always (TrPrO) people in the house (Set). (L19)

As settings medial adverbials seem to acquire a certain degree of prominence in the medial position due to the deviation from their typical, i.e. final position. The main motivation, however, to place the scene-setting adverbial medially rather than finally appears to be the principle of end-weight; out of 11 medial settings 8 are followed by a complex subject noun phrase, cf.

93. [The pantomime was utterly chaotic, yet not contemptible]; there ran through it _(Set) a rage of improvisation which came chiefly from Crook the clown. (Ch65)

It should be mentioned that in one case the medial setting is not constituted by an adverbial phrase but by a prepositional object with locative meaning. This is due to the fact that the verb in the existential construction is other than the common verb *be*, cf.

94. There pressed on Charles _(Set) more than the common human instinct to preserve personal identity (F139)

8.2.4. Initial Adverbial

Adverbials in initial position perform two FSP roles: theme and transition. If thematic they perform the dynamic semantic role of setting. Out of 27 initial adverbials in our sample (25.5% of the total of 106) there are 14 adverbials functioning as settings (about 52 % of all initial adverbials) and 13 as transition-proper oriented elements (about 48% of all initial adverbials). As we have already explained above, sentence adverbs were invariably ascribed the FSP role of transition-proper oriented elements. In our sample two types of sentence adverbs occur in the initial position: conjuncts⁷² and disjuncts, see example below of a conjunct and disjunct respectively:

⁷² Conjuncts as well as disjuncts (for a comment on disjuncts see note 70) are adverbials which are not integrated into to sentence structure (unlike adjuncts), but which primarily serve as linking expressions “conjuncting independent units rather than ...contributing another facet of information to a single integrated unit” (Quirk et al. 1985: 631).

95. Otherwise (TrPrO) there were no near relatives. (L2)

96. Unfortunately (TrPrO) there was now (Set) a duenna present – Mrs Tranter’s cook.
(F116)

A careful distinction had to be made where the same word provided both for a conjunct and an adjunct, compare examples below:

97. Then (TrPrO) there is no common humanity between us all (Set)! (L48)

98. Then (Set) there was a spreading silence (G196)

In example 97 the word *then* functions as a linking expression of inferential nature (Quirk et al. 1985: 633, 635) while in example 98 it functions as an adjunct of time meaning ‘afterwards’ or ‘later’.

Adjuncts in the initial position were invariably ascribed the FSP role of theme, and hence the dynamic semantic role of scene/setting. If context-dependent they clearly connect the sentence with preceding text (by ‘connecting’ a general quality of cohesion is meant, not the particular connecting function of conjuncts), cf.

99. In this uncountry (Set) there was blue sky and light, consent and no sin (G185)

The passage preceding example 99 engages in nightmarish visions of Father Jocelin, the main protagonist of Golding’s novel. The mindscape of the protagonist is poetically referred to as ‘uncountry’ by the author. In example 101 the notion of *this uncountr*y makes a starting point

for introducing *blue sky and light, consent and no sin* and at the same time it connects the existential construction with the preceding text⁷³.

If context-independent, the initial position betrays low communicative value of the adverbial (see Firbas 1992: 49-59). Simply, an initial adverbial in an existential clause does not change the perspective of the clause, which wends towards the notional subject, i.e. the presented phenomenon. An existential construction with an initial context-independent adverbial and a context-dependent NS did not occur in our sample. Such a structure seems implausible, cf. the adduced example below:

100. There was a friendly witch. In an unfriendly old house there lived this friendly witch.

The second sentence gives an impression of a wrongly composed structure. It is due to the distorted FSP (viz. the most dynamic element placed initially) and also due to the misuse of the existential construction. Employment of the existential construction creates a strong anticipation of a phenomenon being presented onto the narrative scene. This anticipation remains unsatisfied in the adduced example above, as the subjective noun phrase does not bring anything new element into the narrative.

Semantically, 10 adjuncts of time and 4 adjunct of place occur in initial positions. This can be explained by the inclination of the adjuncts to operate as scene-setting elements; a presented phenomenon usually appears at a certain time or in a certain place.

8.3. Preliminary Notes on Potentiality

As it was already mentioned in the section treating postmodification, in certain circumstances an adverbial element and a postmodifying element come so close together that an unequivocal interpretation is intricate. Some degree of indeterminacy is characteristic of language in

⁷³ Interestingly, despite its context dependence, which is due to anaphoric *this* referring back to text, the element carries some new information; the nonce word 'uncountry' conveys the new feature to the reader by reason of unusual poetic coinage.

general and it is also present in the domain of functional sentence perspective. In the present study the phenomenon is referred to as *potentiality*⁷⁴. It arises in situations when a sentence does not allow unequivocal interpretation regarding its FSP structure due to indeterminacy of elements within a distributional field. In her survey (“Some thoughts on potentiality in syntactic and FSP structure”), Dušková detects three factors that Firbas identified as those causing potentiality in FSP. First, it is indeterminacy in the semantic classification of the verb, i.e. the verb either indicates existence/appearance on the scene or not (both interpretations are possible) and accordingly the predication either introduces a phenomenon on the scene, which is then rhematic or the subject to which the predication is related is thematic as the verb carries a lower amount of CD. Second, it is the scalar quality of context dependence that is reflected in the phenomenon of co-referentiality; the fundamental question being whether a re-expressed element carries some additional information, and hence it should be treated as (predominantly) context-independent or whether it merely repeats the notion of its antecedent without any additional information and thus being thematic. Third, it is the length of the retrievability span; since its borderlines are not clear-cut a situation may occur when an element is indeterminate regarding its membership within or outside the retrievability span.

In the present study, as already suggested, the element involved in most cases of potentiality is a prepositional phrase (PP). Two linguistic situations in which a PP is a subject of indeterminacy have been observed. First, it follows the head of the subject noun phrase. Second, it follows a participle. In the former, the question arises whether the PP functions as a postmodifying element or as an adverbial element, cf. the example below where it may be understood either as an adverbial of place or as an attributive element specifying the indefinite pronoun:

101. [Father Brown was silent and motionless for half a minute, then he said:
“Superstition is irreligious], but there is something in the air of this place.” (Ch78)

⁷⁴ The term pays tribute to Mathesius who introduced it in his paper “On the Potentiality of the phenomena of language” (see Mathesius 1983) where he explains potentiality as an outcome of “indeterminacy with respect to the assignment of a point to one or two or even more categories” (Dušková in “Some thoughts on potentiality in syntactic and FSP structure”, forthcoming). Firbas (1992) works with terms *potentiality* and *multifunctionality*, Svoboda (2005) adopted the term *multifunctionality*. The author of this study who drew on Dušková’s paper cited in this footnote decided to work with the term *potentiality*.

As regards the second case, the PP may be understood as an element within the scope of participial predication, and hence a part of postmodification⁷⁵ or as an element within the main predication of the existential sentence, cf. the following example where the prepositional phrase *in the middle* may be interpreted as an element complementing the participle (*left in the middle*) or as an adverbial of place functioning on the level of the main predication (*in the middle there was a wide space left*):

102. But there was still a wide space left in the middle for the lifting of stone and wood. (G167)

One of the tasks of the present study is to contribute to understanding the process of applying the FSP theory to literary texts. The phenomenon of indeterminacy cannot be avoided in such texts. In our analyses when we came across an instance of indeterminacy, we always decided one way or another; the same as the reader does. In the following sections we try to explain why one or another decision was taken and we hope this can demonstrate applicability of the FSP theory in practice.

Since only four instances of a PP following a participle occur in our sample, they are discussed only marginally and the main attention is paid to the instances comprising a PP following the head in the subject noun phrase.

8.3.1. PP following a Participle

All 4 instances are treated uniformly, viz. the prepositional phrase is regarded as operating within the scope of the participle. Although we are aware of a possible double interpretation it seems satisfactory to interpret them not as independent adverbials functioning in the main predication but as falling within the scope of the participial predication. In one case the decision was substantiated by the nature of the participle which standing alone without complementation gives an impression of incompleteness, cf.

⁷⁵ As has been already explained a participle in existential sentences is treated as a postmodifying element. See the section on participles above.

103. There was a curious warning pleading in his voice. (L39)

* In his voice there was a curious warning pleading.

* In his voice a curious warning was pleading.

Here the impossibility of moving the PP to the initial position attests to its appurtenance to the participial predication, and hence operating as a part of postmodification since adverbials in the main predication display high flexibility in position.

In another case the orthographic arrangement of the existential sentence bore out our decision to treat the PP as a part of participial predication, cf. example below where the PP (*round this open grave*) is placed together with the participle *standing* and thus its disposition to complement the participle is rather manifest:

104. “There are three headless men,” said Father Brown, “standing round this open grave.” (Ch 75)

However, in two instances the level of indeterminacy is high. The PP is then treated as an element complementing the participle just for the sake of consistency, cf. example 5 where both interpretations (viz. PP operating as an adverbial in the main predication and PP operating within the scope of the participle) of PPs *in the shed outside the north transept* and *from the roof over the vault* seem equally plausible:

105. There was a constant adzing going on in the shed outside the north transept, and a constant banging and thumping from the roof over the vault. (G162)

8.3.2. PP following the Head of a Subject Noun phrase

In our sample of 200 instances there occur 91 sentences comprising a prepositional phrase that follows the head of the subject noun phrase. Out of these 91 sentences 39 have been identified as indeterminate: the unequivocal assignment of syntactic role to the PP, viz. adverbial or

postmodification, was problematic. The impact on the FSP structure will be discussed in due course.

To classify a PP as an adverbial the following criteria were applied. First, due to the versatile nature regarding the sentence position of an adverbial, the PP needed to display the capacity of being separated from the subject noun phrase head and positioned at the beginning of the sentence. Second, the PP was tested for allowing substitution by the adverbial proforms *there* or *then*. Finally, it was born in mind that the semantics of localisation disposes the element which conveys it to function as an adverbial. Cf. example 108 below where the PP (*in Glengyle Castle*) following the subject noun phrase head (*a decent lord*) functions unequivocally as an adverbial, and hence falls among those 52 PPs that do not display indeterminacy.

106. For many centuries there had never been a decent lord in Glengyle Castle (Ch72)

- a/ *In Glengyle Castle* there had never been a decent lord for many centuries.
- b/ For many centuries there had never been a decent lord there.
- c/ For many centuries there had never been a decent lord in that location.

A PP functioning as a postmodifying element allowed paraphrasing by a relative clause, cf.

107. There was only one answer to a crisis of this magnitude. (F102)

There was only one answer which could resolve a crisis of this magnitude.

Of course, a PP constituting postmodifying genitive did not give rise to indeterminacy (e.g. *talk of marriage*).

Instances where the tests mentioned above still failed to resolve the problem of assigning the PP a syntactic role were classified as indeterminate, viz. 39 instances. These will be dealt with in some detail.

In 16 instances (41% of 39 indeterminate cases) the prepositional phrase followed an indefinite pronoun either immediately (see example 108 below) or with adjective(s) preceding it (see example 109):

108. [Well, well! So her ladyship had fallen for him! Well – her ladyship wasn't the first]: there was something about him. (L41)

109. There must have been something sexual in their feelings? (F120)

In all these instances the PP was treated as a postmodifying element and in the lines to follow the motives for this resolution are explained. In the *indefinite pronoun + PP* instances the indefinite pronoun is semantically incomplete. It cannot stand alone, separated from the prepositional phrase, which speaks in favour of interpreting the indefinite pronoun functioning as one unit together with the PP following it, cf.

* About him there was something.

Our interpretation can be squared with Firbas' observations regarding the indefinite pronoun *something* which he considers an element which does not develop the communication further. He observes, "It usually acts as a semantic slot filler, leaving it to another element in the flow of communication to particularize the meaning unexpressed" (1992: 45, point 1).

In instances displaying the *indefinite pronoun + adjective + PP* pattern (example 109 above), the PP was considered a postmodifying element on similar grounds; without the prepositional phrase the adjective gives an impression of incompleteness; an information gap arises – we do not know in what respect there was *something sexual*, and even the preceding context does not fill this gap, cf.

This tender relationship was almost mute. They rarely if ever talked, and if they did, of only the most trivial domestic things. They knew it was that warm, silent co-presence in the darkness that mattered. (?) There must have been something sexual?

The prepositional phrase functions as a semantic complement of the adjective *sexual*, and is thus treated as an element within the postmodification of *something*.

In our analyses we preferred to treat the prepositional phrase in constructions *indefinite pronoun + PP* and *indefinite pronoun + adjective(s) + PP* as the least communicatively dynamic part within the rhematic section (where it is preceded by the pronoun + adjective) rather than an adverbial.

In our sample the head of the PP in the *indefinite pronoun + PP / indefinite pronoun + adjective + PP* pattern is constituted by a limited range of prepositions, namely prepositions ‘*in*’, ‘*about*’ and in a smaller extent ‘*between*’. They also appear with heads other than indefinite pronouns, cf.

110. There was badness enough in the captain taking all that money (Ch83)

111. There is a world of difference between what may be accepted in London and what is proper here. (F112)

112. There was no communication between Wragby Hall and Tevershall village (L9)

In examples 110 and 111 the prepositional phrase was treated as a postmodifying element, in example 112 it was assigned the syntactic role of adverbial and the FSP role of diatheme (dynamic semantic role of scene/setting). While in 110, 111 the PP particularizes the head noun (what badness, what difference), in 112 it has a locative character (where there was no communication). In this case the assignment of syntactic role is significantly reflected in FSP structure of the sentence. Due to its context dependence (see our commentary of the example in Appendix I) and strong locative meaning it necessarily constitutes the scene if ascribed the

syntactic role of adverbial. If considered a postmodifying element, it necessarily constitutes one unit with its head, and hence it is a member of the rheme where it carries the lowest degree of CD due to its context dependence.

8.4. Verbs Other Than Be

In our sample of 200 existential sentences/clauses there are 13 (6.5% of 200 instances) comprising a verb different from verb *be*.⁷⁶ 7 sentences/clauses comprise verb *come*, 2 sentences/clauses comprise verb *run*, and there is one instance of *remain*, *rise*, *lie*, and *press on* each. Table 14 below summarizes the results:

Table 14

	Verb	Number of instances
Verbs other than <i>be</i> in existential constructions	come	7
	run	2
	remain	1
	rise	1
	press on	1
	lie	1
	TOTAL	13 / 6.5%

While in the verb *be* both a notion of *existence* and of *appearance* on the scene merge and only the contextual environment resolves this ambiguity (i.e. whether a verb of *appearance* or a verb of *existence* on the scene is involved), the verbs above rather neatly fall into either one or other semantic category, viz. existence or appearance. Verbs *come* and *rise* denote appearance on the scene while *remain* and *lie* due to their static nature denote existence on the scene. Compare instances from our sample with the adduced examples:

113. [But like more than one of the really ancient houses, they had rotted in the last two centuries into mere drunkards and dandy degenerates],
till there had even come a whisper of insanity. (Ch89)

⁷⁶ For the list of all existential sentences/clauses comprising a verb other than *be*, see Appendix IIIi

till there had even appeared a whisper of insanity.

* till there had even existed a whisper of insanity.

114. Yet there had remained locally a feeling that Ware Commons was public property. (F110)

Yet there had existed locally a feeling that Ware Commons was public property.

* Yet there had appeared locally a feeling that Ware Commons was public property

In example 113 the verb *appear* can substitute the verb *come* without change of meaning of the existential sentence while the verb *exist* disturbs the semantics of the sentence. In example 114 it is on the contrary; although grammatically acceptable, the verb *appear* does not seem to be a plausible substitute for the verb *remain* as it brings about a change in meaning, while the verb *exist* matches the semantic environment of the sentence fittingly. It should be noticed that in both instances (113, 114) the verb *be* provides for a suitable substitute of each verb: it can be explained by its capacity to convey the meaning of appearance as well as existence on the scene.

Verbs *press on* and *run* are not as self-evident regarding the sense of appearance or existence on the scene as the other verbs presented in the table above. In our sample they both denote existence rather than appearance, cf.

115. There runs, between Lyme Regis and Axmouth six miles to the west, one of the strangest coastal landscapes in Southern England. (F107)

116. There pressed on Charles more than the common human instinct to preserve personal identity; there lay behind him all those years of thought, speculation, self-knowledge. (F139)

In example 115 the predication expresses geographical location, and hence stative meaning of existence is evoked. In example 116 the predication expresses a cognitive process, and thus it

can also be related to the stative meaning of existence rather than to the dynamic meaning of appearance.

Regarding the FSP, the existential constructions with a verb other than *be* do not appear to display difference from existentials with the common verb. Upon a closer examination of the 13 sentences/clauses, interestingly, it emerged that in 8 instances the verb is immediately followed by a thematic element, which is invariably locative,⁷⁷ and only afterwards the notional subject follows, e.g.

117. Yet there rose in him (diatheme), and inextinguishably (TrPrO), a desire to protect (rheme).
(F134)

This is perhaps relevant in the instance with prepositional verb *press on* (see example 116 above) where the object is expected to follow the preposition as it complements it (Quirk et al. 1985: 1155-1156). Thus it is grammatically conditioned that a locative thematic element precedes and not follows the rhematic element (= the presented phenomenon). In other cases the FSP structure Theme Proper – Transition – Diatheme – Rheme may be ascribed to the end-weight principle (as in example 116 above) or end-focus principle (as in example 117 above)⁷⁸ as we have already discussed in the section on Medial Adverbial.

Regarding stylistic distinction, Dušková observes, “In contrast to *there + be*, with verbs other than *be* the use of *there* is distinctly formal (literary) and rare.” (1998: 38) As we drew from literary texts, a higher variability of verbs in existential sentences can perhaps be explained by the literariness of the material that was used for the excerption of examples. It would be interesting to compare our results with those obtained from scientific prose where much scarcer occurrence of verbs other than *be* in existential structures would be expected.

⁷⁷ The thematic locative element is in 2 instances accompanied by either a thematic temporal element or a transitional element.

⁷⁸ The two principles often go hand in hand as an extended/complex phrase usually carries a lot of new information.

9. Conclusion

In the present study we have attempted to apply tools devised within the framework of functional sentence perspective theory to explore the meaning of a sentence in the flow of communication. We focused on one of the structures implementing the presentation scale – the existential construction, which was examined both as regards its syntactic structure and its information structure. The outcome is based on evidence from written literary texts. Two types of existential sentences were examined, viz. bare existential sentences and existential sentences with adverbial(s). Syntactic aspects include the structure of the subject noun phrase in the former and position together with static semantics of adverbials in the latter. As regards the FSP aspects, examination of context (in)dependence of the notional subject was carried out in bare existentials, furthermore attention was paid to questions and focalizers. The dynamic semantic roles of adverbials were examined and a commentary on the extended presentation scale was provided. Finally, two more phenomena were touched upon independently, i.e. regardless of their occurrence in either type of existential sentence. First, the phenomenon of potentiality was discussed and demonstrated; second the occurrence of verbs other than *be* in existential sentences was described, exemplified, and reflected. Let us now summarize conclusions that reached in the chapters above.

As regards bare existential constructions they account for 57% of our sample. Such a high frequency of occurrence was ascribed to two reasons. On the one hand it is the disposition of bare existentials comprising a simple noun phrase (no modification) or a noun phrase consisting only of a head noun and simple modification to create a dramatic effect; on the other hand it is the capacity of bare existentials comprising a complex noun phrase to convey a great deal of information within one structure. The rather frequent occurrence of the former (17.5%) is speculated to be specific for the language of fiction although only comparison with analogous analyses carried out on other varieties of text (e.g. academic prose) will validate this estimation.

Examination of FSP of bare existentials revealed structures with rhematic verb. Such information structure arises in two situations. First, the verb is the only carrier of information irretrievable from the preceding context. This occurs when the notional subject is context-

dependent; see examples 57 (answer to a *yes-no* question, the rheme is constituted by polarity) and 58. Second, the verb is a carrier of a contrastive stress. This is not conditioned by context dependence of the notional subject, the verb is simply elevated into the rhematic section for emphasis, see example 59. We have also seen such a situation arise in the second instance level sentence (example 56) with the verb brought to a momentary prominence (not only the verb but any sentence constituent can be brought to prominence in these cases). We shall now present some reflections on the bare existential construction with a context-dependent notional subject. Its communicative meaning appears to differ in meaning from existential constructions with the notional subject that is context-independent. To capture the difference it seems important to distinguish the meaning of 'existence' from the meaning of 'presentation'. While 'existence' means 'something is there/exists', 'presentation' denotes the situation when 'something new is brought onto the scene/is presented'. It appears that the main communicative function of bare existentials with context-independent notional subject is that of **presentation** (a new phenomenon is presented onto the discursive scene) while bare existentials with context-dependent notional subject merely postulate the **existence** of a phenomenon and the semantic component of presentation is missing.

In bare existential sentences displaying the regular FSP pattern (i.e. transitional verb and rhematic notional subject) the structure of the subject noun phrase was examined for contextual boundness of its constituents. In most cases (65.5%) the notional subject is heterogeneous, i.e. it contains one or more context-dependent elements.

As regards focalizers, attention was paid to their position. In our sample, in most instances (8 out of 10) focalizers are placed immediately in front of the element they focus, and hence ambiguity as to what element the focalizer targets does not arise. This is ascribed to the literary style of the texts from which our sample was excerpted: pre-mediated and carefully planned texts are expected to display a low level of ambiguity.

The FSP structure of questions is of considerable interest. We tried to apply Firbasian approach of FSP treatment of questions: the prospective informant's point of view needs to be taken into consideration. For him/her the angle from which he/she is to approach the prospective answer is of considerable importance. Carrier of such information constitutes the

rheme proper of the question. The question word in *wh*-questions and the verb in *yes-no* questions are viewed as elements pointing towards the rheme proper (anticipating it), they are assigned the role of question focus anticipators.

As to existential sentences with adverbial(s), attention was paid to position, static semantics and dynamic semantics of adverbials. Sentence adverbs (conjuncts, disjuncts) or adverbs of indefinite time operate as transition-proper oriented elements and their FSP role is rather straightforward. In our further discussion we shall leave them out and attention will be paid to adjuncts. The relation between the static and dynamic semantics is of considerable interest. Our results show that although local and temporal adverbials are disposed to function as scene-setting elements, the static semantics (time, place) does not necessarily coincide with the dynamic semantic function (setting) as both local and temporal adverbials can also be found in the dynamic semantic role of specification, if context-independent. If context-dependent, the adverbial invariably functions as a setting. For the dynamic semantic function of a context-independent adverbial three factors appear to be crucial, viz. position, semantics, and complexity. An adverbial placed initially functions invariably as a setting. In our sample the same applies for adverbials in medial position. Only one adverbial placed medially functions as a specification, but that is due to special circumstances when it is contrasted, and hence raised to the rhematic section. Final adverbials are disposed to perform both the function of a setting and a specification. Then the aspect of semantics applies. An adverbial semantically amplifying the verb functions as a specification and consequently the extended presentation scale is implemented. Finally, a complex adverbial in final position is often rhematic as it carries a great deal of information.

The phenomenon of potentiality is one of great importance and it is an area of study that calls for further research. Especially in written dialogues, which often take place in fiction, an existential sentence often allows various interpretations due to the fact that the resolving factor of intonation is not available. Unless we work with spoken version of texts, there is always a possibility of misinterpretation and the fact that 27% of our sample is constituted by existential sentences excerpted from dialogues needs to be reflected. We addressed the phenomenon of potentiality as regards prepositional phrases. Particularly the prepositions 'in', 'about',

'between' appear to be disposed to two functions, viz. postmodification and adverbial. As postmodifying elements they particularize the meaning of the head noun/pronoun they follow, which best manifested when a prepositional phrase follows an indefinite pronoun, e.g. *There is something about him*. As adverbials they display flexibility in position and thus allow transposition from the position following the head noun to the initial position. An assignment of a syntactic role to a prepositional phrase is reflected in the FSP structure of a particular sentence. In the role of postmodification a prepositional phrase constitutes a part of the rheme with the exception of a small number of instances with a thematic notional subject. In the role of adverbial it constitutes the diatheme, if context-dependent. If context-independent, it assumes either the role of diatheme or specification (then the semantic factor fully asserts itself).

13 existential sentences in our sample contain a verb other than *be*. In 8 instances the verb is immediately followed by a diatheme of locative character; a fact which might be coincidental. Only further research involving analyses of more existential sentences comprising other verbs than *be* might provide us with enough evidence to make any conclusions. The instances in our sample mostly contain a complex subject noun phrase, and hence the position of diathematic adverbial may be ascribed to the end-weight principle. Most of the verbs can be identified either as verbs of appearance or existence on the scene. In this they differ from the verb *be* which is in this respect neutral.

In our sample by far the most frequent function of the existential construction is one of presentation (a new phenomenon is introduced onto the discursive scene). Next, the existential construction is employed to present a phenomenon and at the same time to specify the circumstances of the presentation (the extended presentation scale). Finally, there is the existential construction with a thematic notional subject. Its communicative function appears to be one of postulation of existence of a known phenomenon.

10. Resumé

Tato diplomová práce se zabývá existenciální konstrukcí *there is/there are* z hlediska syntaktického a aktuálněčlenského. Výsledky práce se opírají o analýzy dvou set vět obsahujících existenciální konstrukci, které byly excerpovány ze čtyř literárních děl v anglickém originále. Hlavní snahou je aplikace teorie o aktuálním členění větěném na konkrétní jazykový materiál.

V teoretické části je podrobně vysvětleno a na příkladech ukázáno, v čem teorie o aktuálním členění větěném spočívá. Autorka zároveň osvětluje koncepty, se kterými později pracuje v praktické části studie. Ta je rozdělena do dvou hlavních oddílů. První z nich se zabývá tzv. holými existenciálními konstrukcemi („bare existential constructions“), tedy konstrukcemi, které neobsahují adverbialní určení. V druhém oddíle jsou pojednány existenciální konstrukce, které adverbialní určení obsahují („existential constructions with adverbial(s)“).

Syntaktické aspekty holé existenciální konstrukce zahrnují strukturu podmětové fráze, tj. určení řídicího členu a jeho modifikace. Byly určeny tři typy podmětové fráze: jednoduchá (‘simple’), která se skládala pouze z determinátoru a řídicího členu (10,5%), komplexní (‘complex’), která obsahovala kvantifikátor, či různé typy modifikace (82,5%), a složená (‘simple’), která obsahovala několikanásobný podmět (7%). 17% vzorku pak představují holé či téměř holé (jednoduchá modifikace adjektivem) existenciální konstrukce, jejichž výskyt autorka připisuje literárnímu stylu z něhož byl vzorek získán, a to kvůli jejich kapacitě vytvořit dramatický efekt.

Z hlediska aktuálního členění se zkoumání zaměřilo na kontextovou zapojenost nociónálního podmětu a aktuálněčlenského vzorce, který typ holé existenciální konstrukce realizoval. Nociónální podmět byl rozdělen na kontextově nezávislý, heterogenní (tzn. obsahující některé kontextově závislé složky) a kontextově závislý. První dva typy podmětu se vyskytly v převládajícím vzorci $T - Tr(V) - R(S)$, kde sloveso plní funkci přechodu a nociónální podmět funkci rématu. Komunikační funkce těchto konstrukcí – uvedení nového

jevu na scéně – se jeví jako primární. Zajímavé jsou případy s kontextově závislým nociónálním podmětem, kde sloveso je informačně nejdůležitější prvek věty a plní dvě aktuálněčlenské funkce zároveň: přechodu a rématu. U těchto konstrukcí byla identifikována komunikativní funkce zdůraznění existence jevu. Nakonec se vyskytly případy s rematickým slovesem, které bylo vyzdvihnuto jako nejdůležitější část věty kvůli důrazu, tento typ je ovšem třeba odlišovat, neboť každá část věty může být zdůrazněna jako momentálně nejdůležitější.

V druhém oddíle se analýza zaměřila na syntaktické a aktuálněčlenské funkce adverbialních určení. Adverbialní určení nezačleněná do větné stavby (disjuncts, conjuncts) byla určena jako součást přechodové části v informační struktuře věty („transition-proper oriented elements“). Adverbialní určení začleněná do větné stavby (adjuncts) byla dále zkoumána podle pozice ve větě a sémantického obsahu, a byla jim připsána aktuálněčlenská role. Vyskytlo se pět sémantických kategorií (místo, čas, zřetel, účel, výjimka). Adverbialní určení účelu a výjimky působí v aktuálněčlenské roli vlastního rématu (dynamickosémantické roli specifikace), tedy jako informačně nejdůležitější prvek věty. Adverbialní určení místa a času se vyskytují jak v roli tématu (dynamickosémantické roli scény), tak v roli vlastního rématu. Rozhodující je pak postavení ve větě, sémantický obsah ve vztahu ke slovesu, a okrajově komplexita adverbialního určení. Existenciální konstrukce s adverbialním určením v dynamickosémantické roli specifikace vykazují tzv. rozšířenou prezentační škálu.

Pozornost byla věnována i otázkám (9 případů z celého vzorku), které představují z hlediska aktuálního větného členění zajímavý problém. Tázací slovo v doplňovacích otázkách plní aktuálněčlenskou roli „question focus anticipator“, tedy prvku který předjímá réma otázky. Réma otázky je pak tvořeno prvkem, který naznačuje případnému respondentovi z jakého úhlu má otázku zodpovědět.

Bylo poukázáno na jev zvaný „potencialita“, tj. jev dvojí i vícere možné interpretace. Pozornost byla věnována možnosti dvojího výkladu syntaktické a aktuálněčlenské funkce předložkových frází. Při rozhodování hrálo roli, do jaké míry je předložka závislá na řídicím substantivu, plnost sémantického obsahu předložkové fráze a přemístitelnost předložky na jinou pozici ve větě.

Poslední jev, jímž se tato práce zabývá, je výskyt sloves jiných než sloveso *být* (6,5%), jev poměrně vzácný v existenciálních konstrukcích. Jejich výskyt je připisován literárnímu stylu materiálu, ze kterého byl čerpán vzorek, na němž byly prováděny analýzy. Slovesa lze roztrždit buď jako slovesa objevení se na scéně („verbs of appearance on the scene“) nebo jako slovesa existence na scéně („verbs of existence on the scene“).

Existenciální konstrukce je využívána především jako nástroj k dosažení základního rozložení výpovědní dynamiky, kdy kontextově nezávislý noční podmět může být umístěn v koncové pozici. Její hlavní funkce spočívá v uvedení nového jevu. Okrajovou funkcí se jeví být zdůraznění existence již známého jevu.

11. Bibliography

- Bolinger, D.** (1979) "Pronouns in Discourse" in T. Givón (ed.) *Syntax and Semantics 12: Discourse and Syntax*. New York, San Francisco, London: Academic Press: 289-309
- Chafe, W. L.** (1970) *Meaning and the Structure of Language*. Chicago: The University of Chicago Press.
- Chamonikolasová, J. and M. Adam** (2005) "The Presentation Scale in the Theory of Functional Sentence Perspective" in *Patterns, A Festschrift for Libuše Dušková*. Čermák, Klégr, Malá, Šaldová (eds.). Prague: Modern Language Association (KMF): 59-69.
- Daneš, František,** (1974) "Functional Sentence Perspective and the Organization of the Text" in F. Daneš (ed.) *Papers on Functional Sentence Perspective*. Prague: 106-128.
- Daneš, František,** (1979) "O identifikaci známé (kontextově zapojené) informace v textu" (On identification of given [contextually bound] information in a text). *Slovo a slovesnost* 40: 257 – 270.
- Daneš, F., M.Grepl and Z. Hlavsa** (eds) (1987) *Mluvnice češtiny 3, Skladba* (A Grammar of Czech 3, Syntax), Praha: Academia.
- Dušková, L. et al.** (1994) *Mluvnice současné angličtiny na pozadí češtiny*. Praha: Academia.
- Dušková L.** (1997) "Expressing Indefiniteness in English" in *Acta Universitatis Carolinae. Philologica 5. Prague Studies in English. XXII*. Prague: Charles University in Prague. The Karolinum Press: 33-50.
- Dušková, L.** (1998) "Syntactic forms of the Presentation Scale" in *Linguistica Pragensia* 8: 36-43.

- Dušková, L.** (1999a) “Basic Distribution of Communicative Dynamism vs. Nonlinear Indication of Functional Sentence Perspective” in *Prague Linguistic Circle Papers* 3, Amsterdam/ Philadelphia: John Benjamins.
- Dušková, L.** (1999b) *Studies in the English Language*, Part 2. Prague: Karolinum – Charles University Press.
- Dušková, L.** (forthcoming) “From the Heritage of Vilém Mathesius and Jan Firbas: Syntax in the Service of FSP” in *Theory and Practice in English Studies* 3. Proceedings from the 8th Conference of English, American and Canadian Studies. J. Chovanec (ed.) Brno: Masarykova univerzita.
- Dušková, L.** (forthcoming) “Some thoughts on potentiality in syntactic and FSP structure”.
- Firbas, J.** (1965) “Note On Transition Proper” in *Philologica Pragensia* 8: 170-176.
- Firbas, J.** (1974) “Some aspects of the Czechoslovak Approach to problems of functional sentence perspective” in F. Daneš (ed.) *Papers on Functional Sentence Perspective*. Prague: 11-37
- Firbas, J.** (1975) “On 'Existence/Appearance on the Scene' in Functional Sentence Perspective” in *Prague Studies in English*, XVI. *Philologica* 1: 47 – 70.
- Firbas, J.** (1992) *Functional Sentence Perspective in Written and Spoken Communication*. New York: Cambridge University Press.
- Firbas, J.** (1995) “Retrievability Span in Functional Sentence Perspective” in *Sborník prací filozofické fakulty brněnské univerzity*. S1. *Brno Studies in English* 21: 17-45.
- Hajičová, E.** (1976) “Struktura doplňovací otázky a odpovědi z hlediska aktuálního členění” (The Structure of Wh-questions and Answers from the FSP Point of View). *Slovo a slovesnost* 37: 300-307.
- Halliday, M. A. K. and R. Hasan** (1976) *Cohesion in English*. London: Longman.

- König, E.** (1991) *The Meaning of Focus Particles*. London.
- Křížková, H.** (1968) “Tázací věta a některé problémy tzv. Aktuálního (kontextového) členění [The Interrogative Sentence and Some Problems of the so-called Functional Sentence Perspective (Contextual Organization of the Sentence)]”. *Naše řeč* 4: 200-210.
- Leech, G. N.** (1983) *Principles of Pragmatics*, London.
- Mathesius, V.** (1975) *A Functional Analysis of Present Day-English*. Prague: Academia.
- Mathesius, V.** (1983) “On the Potentiality of the phenomena of language” in *Praguiana. Some Basic and Less Known Aspects of the Prague Linguistic School*. Prague: Academia: 3-45.
- Mathesius, V.** (2001) *Nebojte se angličtiny!* (Don't be afraid of English!). Prague: H&H.
- Nekvapil, J.** (1993) “Asymmetry between syntactic and textual units” in *Studies in Functional Stylistics*. Chloupek, J. and J. Nekvapil (eds.). Amsterdam: John Benjamins 36 in *Linguistic and Literary Studies in Eastern Europe (LLSEE)*. General Editor: P. A. Luelsdorff.
- Quirk, R., S. Greenbaum, G. Leech and J. Svartvik** (1972) *A Grammar of Contemporary English Language*, London.
- Quirk, R., S. Greenbaum, G. Leech and J. Svartvik** (1985) *A Comprehensive Grammar of the English Language*, London.
- Skënderi, A.** (1997) *Functional Sentence Perspective in Albanian Texts*. Wien: WUV – Universitätsverlag.
- Svoboda, A.** (1968) “The Hierarchy of Communicative Units and Fields as Illustrated by English Attributive Constructions” in *Brno Studies in English* 7: 49 – 101.
- Svoboda, A.** (1981) *Diatheme*. Brno:Univerzita J. E. Purkyně v Brně.

Svoboda, A. (2005) “Firbasian Semantic Scales and Comparative Studies” in *Patterns, A Festschrift for Libuše Dušková*. Čermák, Klégr, Malá, Šaldová (eds.). Prague: Modern Language Association (KMF): 217 – 229.

12. Sample Sources

TEXT 1

English original: **D. H. Lawrence**. *Lady Chatterley's Lover*. Privately printed. 1929.

Czech translation: František Vrba. *Milenec Lady Chatterlyové*. Praha: Odeon, 1987.

(doslov napsal Martin Hilský)

TEXT 2

English original: **Gilbert Keith Chesterton**. *The Annotated Innocence of Father Brown*.

Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1987

Czech translation: Alena Hartmanová, J. Z. Novák. *Povídky otce Browna/Paradoxy pana Ponda*. Praha: Odeon, 1985.

examples 58 – 63 AH

examples 67 – 71, 100 JZN

Jan Čulík. *Modrý Kříž*. Praha: Lidová demokracie, 1968.

examples 51 - 53

examples 76 – 99

chybí: př. 54, 55, 56, 57, 64, 65, 66, 72, 73, 74, 75

TEXT 3

English original: **John Fowles**. *The French Lieutenant's Woman*. London: Triad/Panther Books. 1985.

Czech Translation: Helena Žantovská. *Francouzova milenka*. Praha: Mladá fronta, 1976.

TEXT 4

English original: **William Golding**. *The Spire*. London: Faber and Faber. 1964.

Czech translation: Jan Čulík. Praha: Vyšehrad, 1989.

13. Appendices

I. Comprehensive analysis (of 200 instances in the sample)

Note: In the following analysis, the **highlighted text** draws attention to possible source of context dependence in examples under examination.

Source: D. H. Lawrence. *Lady Chatterley's Lover*. Privately printed. 1929.

Czech translation: František Vrba. *Milenec Lady Chatterlyové*. Praha: Odeon, 1987.
(doslov napsal Martin Hilský)

1. *It is rather hard work: there is now no smooth road into the future: but we go round, or scramble over the obstacles.* (p.1)

Translation:

Je to pořádná dřina: do budoucnosti dnes nevede žádná hladká silnice, místo toho obcházíme nebo přelézáme překážky.

Type of existential construction: negative existential medial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **diatheme** (*now*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **composite rheme** (*smooth road into the future*)

Commentary:

Identifying the rheme and specifying the function of the final element *into the future* (scene-setting adverbial or postmodification?) will be of our main interest.

The adverbial of time *now* does not contribute to the development of communicative dynamism as it merely confirms the temporal environment of the preceding sentence and that is the present. Thus, *now* can be identified as a scene-setting adverbial, the fact being supported by its position, which displays deviation from the grammatical word order. Its placement further to the left from its expected position (i.e. at the end of the clause) implies its relatively low degree of CD. On the other hand, its placement after the theme proper and the transition suggests a higher degree of CD than normally associated with a theme.

Analysis of the composite rheme:

The complex rhematic part seems to have the following FSP. The notional subject (*road*) is a context-independent element and as such constitutes the rheme of the sentence. This is the common case of context-independent notional subjects in existential constructions.

In the interpretation of the negative particle (*no*) we will take the view of Jan Firbas who understands it as a *negation focus anticipator* (NegFocA) that is “perspectived to the element that carries the highest degree of CD” (Firbas 1992: 102). In our case the focus anticipator is perspectived to the composite rhematic sphere of the clause in which *smooth* constitutes the rheme proper, *road* constitutes the rheme and *into the future* constitutes the element with the lowest degree of CD within the rhematic section.

As far as the final element is concerned (*into the future*), the function of postmodification seems to be the case here as the test of transferability (i.e. the possibility of shifting the final element to the initial position) may suggest. Adverbials can change their position in a sentence while postmodification is bound to its head word and its position is therefore fixed. In our case the existential construction with *into the future* as an adverbial in the initial position seems to be awkward: * *Into the future there is now no smooth road*. Also, the paraphrase by a relative clause is possible here – *There is now no smooth road which leads into the future* – which also supports our interpretation of the final element as the postmodification.

The modification elements and their head word constitute one FSP unit. (Svoboda, 1968). Here the postmodifying element (*into the future*) is partially predictable from the preceding context. Cf. *The cataclysm has happened, we start to build up new little habitats, to have new little hopes. It is rather hard work: there is now no smooth road into the future: but we go round, or scramble over the obstacles.*

The partial predictability springs from the immediately relevant context where hopes and new beginnings are associated with future. Cf. *predictable* information in Daneš (1979:257). Also, the interpretation of *into the future* as the least communicatively dynamic part in the rheme is supported by the fact that as a further specification it would carry the intonation centre. In that case a contrast with another adverb of time would be implied and fronting of the element would be possible:

INTO THE FUTURE there is no smooth road but INTO THE PAST we can get fairly easily.

The lowest degree of CD of *into the future* within the rheme can thus be due to its partial contextual boundness and the semantics of the sentence.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + premodification (*smooth*) + head (*road*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*into the future*))

medial adverbial – context-independent, setting, adverbial of time

2. *Clifford had a sister, but she had departed. Otherwise there were no near relatives.* (p.2)

Translation:

Clifford měl sestru, ale ta odjela pryč. Jinak neměl žádné blízké příbuzné.

Type of the existential construction: negative bare existential with modified notional subject
FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*Otherwise*) – **theme** (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) –

NegFocA (*no*) – **rheme** (*near relatives*).

Commentary:

The nature of the adverbial (non-integrated into the sentence structure, i.e. sentence adverb) clearly indicates that it does not serve the scene-setting function, but it is a linking device which provides for the continuity of what has been stated before (in our example the conjunct specifies what has been stated before). Jan Firbas classifies sentence adverbs as *transition proper oriented elements* (TrPro). “They [sentence adverbs] are closely related to the modal indication conveyed by the TMEs. In the presence of one or more successful competitors, they usually retain their close relationship to the TMEs and together with them enter into the development of the communication after the foundation (theme) has been laid. They are then regarded as TrPro, and can retain this status irrespective of sentence position.” (Firbas 1992: 77).

The interpretative arrangement would be as follows: **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*otherwise*) – **transition proper** (*were*) – **composite rhematic part** (*no near relatives*).

Analysis of the composite rheme:

From the preceding sentence it may be gathered that the topic of relatives has already been established and that an already known item of information is being retrieved in the existential

construction. However, it needs to be mentioned that the topic of sisterhood does not exhaust the concept of relatives introduced in the sentence under study. Although *a sister*, of course, ranks among *relatives*, it is not co-extensive with it, i.e. the term *near relatives* is broader in meaning (e.g. *sister, brother, grandson*, etc) – in this sense the phrase carries new information and is thus context-independent.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + premodification (*near*) + head (*relatives*))

3. *But he had been so much hurt that something inside him had perished, some of his feelings had gone. There was a blank of insentience.* (p.2)

Translation:

Poněvadž tolik vytrpěl, schopnost utrpení ho do jisté míry opustila. Zůstával nedotčený [...]

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a blank of insentience*).

Commentary:

The existential construction comprises the existential subject (*there*) filling the thematic position, a verb of existence on the scene (*was*) and the noun phrase (*a blank of insentience*) constituting the notional subject. Now the question arises whether the notional subject is context-independent as expected after a verb of existence on the scene (*was*) or whether the existence of the phenomenon is presupposed in the previous context and thus it is context-dependent. Such interpretation has been explained and proved as possible in Dušková's paper on selected syntactic constructions in the framework of FSP. One of the structures under study was precisely the existential construction. (Dušková 2005)

Upon closer examination of the immediately relevant context it can be estimated that Clifford (*he* in the excerpted sample above) hardened in feeling due to his fatal injury (spinal injury which he had suffered in war and due to which he was left disabled). And as *some of his feelings had gone*, it can be inferred that a vacuum must have been left there, a sort of an empty place where there is no life. The concept of *a blank of insentience* seems to have been implied earlier and the notional subject in the existential construction is thus partially contextually dependent. Despite its semi-dependence it contains new specifying elements and throws a new light on the state in which Clifford found himself after the war, the aspect of "newness" being underlined by the indefinite article. It seems we deal here with a similar case as in the example 2 where the notional subject had also been implied before it was specified in an existential construction. Within the rhematic part, the postmodification (*of insentience*) carries a higher degree of CD and constitutes the **rheme proper** (Firbas 1992: 84, Svoboda 1968, Nekvapil 1993: 196).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*blank*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase(*of insentience*))

4. *And however one might sentimentalise it, this sex business was one of the most ancient, sordid connections and subjections. Poets who glorified it were mostly men. Women had always known there was something better, something higher.* (p.4)

Translation:

A necht' se to jakkoli sentimentálně oponentlovalo, tyhle sexuální záležitosti byly jedním z nejstarších a nejspinavějších vztahů a područí. Básníci, kteří je oslavovali, byli většinou muži. Ženy vždycky věděly, že to je něco lepšího, něco vyššího.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme 1** (*something better*) – **rheme 2** (*something higher*)

Commentary:

The existential construction is embedded in a complex sentence in which it constitutes the subordinate clause of the syntactic function of the object. It comprises two asyndetically coordinated conjoints (i.e. two communicative subfields).

Communicative field of the whole of the coordinated structure is most probably governed by linearity. Although we have not come across any analyses of such structures in literature, we believe that the writer (the producer) of the text has a certain communicative plan in mind and that (s)he arranges the conjoints according to that plan. Thus, it can be assumed that the conjoints are arranged as R₁, R₂, R₃, etc. within the frame of the rhematic part.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – compound NP (1st conjoint (*something better*) + 2nd conjoint (*something higher*))

Commentary on the communicative subfields:

4a (*there was something better*)

The existential construction comprises the existential subject (*there*) filling the thematic position, verb of existence on the scene (*was*) and the noun phrases (*something better*, *something higher*) constituting the rheme. Within the rhematic part there is the head noun operating as the rheme and a postmodification operating as the rheme proper carrying the highest degree of CD of the whole: **theme** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something*) – **rheme proper** (*better*).

4b (*there was something higher*)

4b the same as 4a comprises an indefinite pronoun which is context-independent but which has little semantic value and only the attributive element (*higher*) specifies the meaning of the phrase. The FSP structure is the same as in 4a: **theme** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something*) – **rheme proper** (*higher*).

Commentary on translation:

We need to point out that the translation does not correspond to the original sentence in that the existential construction (English original) was not kept, but substituted by a verbo-nominal identifying predication (Czech translation). We believe the translation *Ženy vždycky věděly, že existuje něco lepšího, něco vyššího* would be a more fitting one.

5. The amazing, the profound, the unbelievable thrill there was in passionately talking to some really clever young man by the hour, resuming day after day for months... this they had never realized till it happened! (pp.4 – 5)

Translation:

To úžasné, hluboké, neuvěřitelné vzrušení, jaké skýtá vášnivý rozhovor s opravdu chytrým, mladým mužem, rozhovor po celé hodiny a pokračující den za dnem po celé měsíce... To si nikdy ani ve snách nedovedly představit, dokud k tomu nedošlo.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** ([that] *the amazing, the profound, the unbelievable thrill in passionately talking to some really clever young man by the hour, resuming day after day for months*)

Commentary:

The existential construction is construed as a postmodification of the initial verbless clause of exclamative function expressing emotive attitude (*The amazing, the profound, the unbelievable thrill!*). It is realised by a relative clause whose notional subject though omitted is at hand to be filled in, cf. *The amazing, the profound, the unbelievable thrill that there was in passionately talking...* The rheme of the existential construction is then constituted by the antecedent of the relative pronoun which constitutes the notional subject of the dependent relative clause.

The prepositional phrase (*in passionately talking to some really clever young man by the hour*) constitutes a discontinuous postmodification (the discontinuity being due to the operation of the end-weight and end-focus principle).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*that*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*in passionately talking to some really clever young man by the hour, resuming day after day for months*))

6. *Though Connie did want children: if only to fortify her against her sister-in-law Emma. But early in 1918 Clifford was shipped home smashed, and there was no child.* (p.10)

Translation:

Connie nicméně chtěla děti, byť i jen proto, aby upevnily její postavení proti švagrové Emmě. Jenomže na začátku roku 1918 byl Clifford převezen domů v cárech a žádné dítě tu nebylo.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential with simple notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*child*)

Commentary:

The existential construction comprises existential *There* (**theme**), *was* (**transition**) and noun the phrase *no child* (**rhematic part**). The rhematic part comprises a given element (*child*) and a negative particle (*no*) which having no successful competitors carries the highest degree of CD and thus it constitutes the **rheme proper**. (Cf. Firbas 1992: 102)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*child*))

7. *The people were as haggard, shapeless, and dreary as the countryside, and as unfriendly. Only there was something in their deep-mouthed slurring of the dialect, and the thresh-thresh of their hob-nailed pit-boots as they trailed home in gangs on the asphalt from work that was terrible and a bit mysterious.* (p.12)

Translation:

Lidé tu byli stejně divocí, beztvární a pochmurní jako krajina, a právě tak nevlídní. Jenomže v jejich hrdelním splývavém nářečí a v klapotu jejich ocvočkovaných důlních bagančat, když táhli po asfaltu domů z práce, bylo něco strašlivého a jaksi tajemného.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with heavily postmodified NS

Commentary:

The existential construction constitutes the main clause to a dependent relative clause; cf. *There was something that was terrible and a bit mysterious*. The existential construction consists of a sentence adverbial (*Only*) constituting a transition proper element, existential subject (*there*) constituting the theme, notional subject (*something*) which constitutes the rheme of the construction and a successive postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*in their deep-mouthed slurring of the dialect, and the thresh-thresh of their hob-nailed pit-boots as they trailed home in gangs on the asphalt from work*) and a relative clause (*that was terrible and a bit mysterious*) which carries the highest degree of CD and constitutes the rheme proper of the whole sentence.

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*Only*) – **theme** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something in their deep-mouthed slurring of the dialect, and the thresh-thresh of their hob-nailed pit-boots as they trailed home in gangs on the asphalt from work that was terrible and a bit mysterious*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + successive postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*in their deep-mouthed slurring of the dialect, and the thresh-thresh of their hob-nailed pit-boots as they trailed home in gangs on the asphalt from work*) and a relative clause (*that was terrible and a bit mysterious*))

8. *The people were as haggard, shapeless, and dreary as the countryside, and as unfriendly. Only there was something in their deep-mouthed slurring of the dialect, and the thresh-thresh of their hob-nailed pit-boots as they trailed home in gangs on the asphalt from work that was terrible and a bit mysterious.*

There had been no welcome home for the young squire, no festivities, no deputation, not even a single flower. (p.12)

Translation:

Lidé tu byli stejně divocí, beztvární a pochmurní jako krajina, a právě tak nevlídní. Jenomže v jejich hrdelním splývavém nářečí a v klapotu jejich ocvočkovaných důlních bagančat, když táhli po asfaltu domů z práce, bylo něco strašlivého a jaksi tajemného.

Nikdo mladého milostpána domů nevítal, žádné oslavy, žádná deputace, ba ani jediný květ.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential with modified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme 1** (*no welcome home for the young squire*) – **rheme 2** (*no festivities*) – **rheme 3** (*no deputation*) – **rheme 4** (*not even a single flower*).

Commentary:

The existential construction opens a new paragraph. It includes a multiple notional subject whose components are asyndetically coordinated. There is a gradual increase in CD as each of

the subject components specifies the preceding one until the sentence reaches its most dynamic part, which is highlighted by the use of focalizer *even*. The rheme is constituted by the first component in the coordinated structure – the postmodified noun (*welcome home*); the negative particles operate as NegFocA(s).

The prepositional phrase (*for the young squire*) operates as a postmodifying element and as such it is a part of the rheme. Due to its context-dependence reflected in the definite article (the broader context is the one of the young squire's homecoming) the prepositional phrase carries the lowest degree of CD within the rheme.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – compound NP (1st conjoint (*no welcome home for the young squire*) + 2nd conjoint (*no festivities*) + 3rd conjoint (*no deputation*) + 4th conjoint (*not even a single flower*))

9. *There was no communication between Wragby Hall and Tevershall village, none. No caps were touched, no curteys bobbed. The colliers merely stared; the tradesmen lifted their caps to Connie as to an acquaintance, and nodded awkwardly to Clifford; that was all. Gulf impassable, and a quiet sort of resentment on either side.* (p.12)

Translation:

Mezi zámkem Wragby a vesnicí Tevershall nebyl žádný styk, naprosto žádný. Nikdo nesmekal, nikdo nevysekával pukrlata. Havíři jenom koukali; obchodníci pošupovali před Conií čepicemi jako před známou a Cliffordovi nedbale kývali; to bylo všechno.

Nepřekročitelná propast a jakýsi tichý odpor na obou stranách.

Type of existential construction: negative existential with final adverbial (localisation)

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*communication*) – **diatheme** (*between Wragby Hall and Tevershall village*)

Commentary:

The existential construction opens a new paragraph. However, from the structure of the sentence it can be construed what elements are presented as given and what elements are presented as new. This principle was observed already by Mathesius who writes, “*When we start to speak about something which cannot yet be referred to as a known fact, then from the complex of notions we anticipate one notion as given that naturally presents itself, and we make it a starting point.*” (1975: 82) Here, the adverbial of place (*between Wragby Hall and Tevershall village*) constitutes the setting of the scene anticipated by existential *there*. The givenness of the scene is established by broader context: a new chapter opens five paragraphs before our sentence is introduced into the discourse and from the start the situation of Wragby and Tevershall is being described (location, difference between the two places, etc.).

The notional subject (*no communication*) is communicatively the most dynamic element. The fact, that the notional subject constitutes the rheme of the existential construction is also reflected in the continuation of the text, which shows a simple linear progression where the rheme of the opening sentence becomes the theme of the following context ($T_1 - R_1, T_2 = R_1$). And indeed, not communicating is illustrated in the following sentences (*no caps were touched, no curteys bobbed, quiet sort of resentment*).

Analysis of the rhematic part:

The notional subject carries higher degree of CD since it is context-independent. We believe the intonation centre would fall on the element of *communication* and our interpretation seems to be supported by the Czech translation where the element of highest communicative importance is positioned at the end of the distributional field (cf. *Mezi zámkem Wragby a vesnicí Tevershall nebyl žádný styk*).

The pronoun (*none*) constitutes an independent element, which is not a part of the existential construction, and whose antecedent is the postverbal part of the preceding construction. We believe the intonation would reveal an independent tone unit as well.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*communication*))

final adverbial – adverbial of place, context dependent, semantically setting

Elliptical existential construction:

We should not forget to mention that there is an elliptical existential construction, which is introduced at the end of the extract: *Gulf impassable, and a quiet sort of resentment on either side*. The existential *there* and the verb of presentation/existence on the scene are omitted: *There was gulf impassable, and a quiet sort of resentment on either side*.

10. *He had taken to writing stories; curious, very personal stories about people he had known. Clever, rather spiteful, and yet, in some way, meaningless. The observation was extraordinary and peculiar. But there was no touch, no actual contact. It was as if the whole thing took place in a vacuum.* (p.15)

Translation:

Dal se do psaní povídek; podivných, velmi osobních povídek o lidech, které znával. Byly chytré, dost poťouchlé, a přece nějakým záhadným způsobem bezvýznamné. Byly v nich neobyčejné a zvláštní postřehy. Ale chyběl jim dotyk, opravdový kontakt. Jako by se v nich všechno odehrávalo ve vzduchoprázdnu.

Type of existential construction: bare negative existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*touch, no actual contact*).

Commentary:

The sentence under discussion displays an existential construction with modifying apposition following the notional subject. The noun phrase *no actual contact* constitutes a specifying apposition to the preceding *no touch*. As far as the FSP structure is concerned, **the theme** is constituted by the existential *there*, **the transition** is constituted by the verb of existence on the scene and **the rheme** (whose semantic function is that of a phenomenon presented on the scene) is constituted by a notional subject with apposition. Within the rhematic part, the latter noun phrase carries a higher degree of CD due to its placement further to the right and also semantically it develops the communication a little further as it adds detail to the information about the impersonality of Clifford stories. As far as the negative particle is concerned, we will take the view of Jan Firbas who ascribes it the function of negation focus anticipator:

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*touch*) + appositional postmodification (*no actual contact*))

11. *It was she, Emma, who should be bringing forth the stories, these books, with him; the Chatterley stories, something new in the world, that they, the Chatterleys, had put there. There was no other standard. There was no organic connection with the thought and expression that had gone before. Only something new in the world: the Chatterley books, entirely personal.* (p.16)

Translation:

To ona, Emma, s ním měla plodit ty povídky a ty knihy; chatterlyovské povídky, něco nového na světě, co sem uvedli právě oni, Chatterlyové. Jiné měřítko neexistovalo. Neexistovala žádná organická spojitost s myšlenkami a způsobem vyjádření, které tu byly před tím. Jenom to nové na světě: chatterlyovské knihy, naprosto osobní.

Type of existential construction: bare negative existential with modified notional subject
FSP pattern:

Theme (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*other standard*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + premodification (*other*) + head (*standard*))

12. *It was she, Emma, who should be bringing forth the stories, these books, with him; the Chatterley stories, something new in the world, that they, the Chatterleys, had put there. There was no other standard. There was no organic connection with the thought and expression that had gone before. Only something new in the world: the Chatterley books, entirely personal.* (p.16)

Translation:

See example 11

Type of existential construction: bare negative existential (with both premodified and postmodified notional subject)

FSP pattern:

Theme (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*organic connection with the thought and expression that had gone before*).

Commentary 1:

The composite rhematic part consists of a noun phrase (negative determiner – premodification – head noun – complex postmodification). The postmodification has a higher informative value and as such it constitutes the rheme proper of the whole.

We have also considered the intonation centre being on the adverbial *BEFORE*. In such case the adverbial would be contrastive and thus constitute the rheme proper (informationally the most important part) of the whole. However, we dismissed such interpretation, as the preceding context does not suggest the contrast. We imagine such interpretation would be relevant in a sentence similar to our adduced one, cf. *He kept up with the literary tradition then, but lost connection with what had gone before*. However, the actual context does not carry the meaning of the adduced sentence and therefore we have abandoned the interpretation which ascribes the adverbial *before* the intonation nucleus.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + premodification (*organic*) + head (*connection*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*with the thought and expression that had gone before*))

13. *Connie's father, when he paid a flying visit to Wragby, said in private to his daughter: As for Clifford's writing, it's smart but there's nothing in it.* (p.16)

Translation:

Coniin otec, když letmo letmo navštívil Wragby, řekl dceři v soukromí: „To Cliffordovo psaní je chytré, ale nic v tom není.“

Type of existential construction: bare negative existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*nothing in it*)

Commentary:

The element with the highest degree of CD is constituted by the indefinite pronoun *nothing*. The postmodifying prepositional phrase specifies the otherwise incomplete meaning of its head (*nothing*).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*nothing*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*in it*))

14. *If the critics praised it, and Clifford's name was almost famous, and it even brought in money... what did her father mean by saying there was nothing in Clifford's writing? What else could there be?* (p.16)

Translation:

Když to kritika chválí a Cliffordovo jméno je skoro slavné, a dokonce to vynáší peníze... co tím otec myslí, že v Cliffordově psaní nic není? Co jiného by v něm mělo být?

Type of existential construction: bare negative existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*nothing in Clifford's writing*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-dependent element: *it*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*nothing*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*in it*))

15. *If the critics praised it, and Clifford's name was almost famous, and it even brought in money... what did her father mean by saying there was nothing in Clifford's writing? What else could there be?* (p.16)

Translation:

See the example 15

Type of existential construction: interrogative bare existential (with postmodified notional subject)

Commentary:

The interrogative expression relates to the phenomenon on the scene and *else* is the element with the highest degree of CD. The FSP of the construction: **theme** (*there*) – **transition** (*could be*) – **rheme** (*What else*)

The interpretative arrangement: *there* – *could be* – *what else*.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*what*) + postmodification (= adjective in postposition) (*else*))

16. *For Connie had adopted the standard of the young: what there was in the moment was everything.* (p.17)

Translation:

Connie totiž přijala měřítko mladých: přítomný okamžik znamená všechno.

Type of existential construction: existential with temporal localisation, extended presentation scale (the adverbial constitutes the FSP role of specification)

FSP pattern:

Theme (*what [the thing that]*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*was*) – **specification** (*in the moment*)

Commentary:

Interestingly, the existential construction is embedded in a nominal relative clause (compare the underlying structure *A thing that there was in the moment was everything*). A description of this type of construction has been given by Dušková in her paper “On the Nature of Dependent *Wh*-Clauses”, “*The wh-word is an apo koinou element constituting a sentence part of both the superordinate and the wh-clause. In the superordinate clause it is contained as the covert antecedent of the relative clause in whose structure it is incorporated overtly as the relative, cf. (2) (a) that which/ a thing that, (b) the place where, (c) the (kind of) person that. Hence an immediate constituent of the superordinate clause is the superficially unexpressed antecedent of the relative clause with respect to which the rest of the wh-clause acts as postmodification. What we are concerned with is in fact a complex sentence with an adjectival relative clause modifying a superficially deleted antecedent constituted by a general term for a person, a thing, place, etc.*” (Studies in the English Language II: 231)

In our sentence, there are two distributional fields:

1. *what (the thing that...)* (**theme**) – *was* (**transition**) – *everything* (**rheme**)

2. *the thing that there was in the moment.*

“The relative adjectival clause (underlined) modifying the antecedent of *what* is realised by *there*-construction. “The omitted relative constitutes the theme of the existential construction as it repeats the free relative *what*. The rheme of the construction is constituted by the polarity of the verb and by the adverbial. The existential construction here does not introduce a phenomenon on the scene, but it serves the verb to be interpreted as *verbum existentiae* (*the thing that there existed in the moment*).” (This was prompted to me by Professor Dušková, during a personal consultation on 21st of December 2005.)

notional subject (context) – context-dependent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (*what*)

final adverbial – adverbial of time, specification

17. *But it was all a dream [...] No substance to her or anything... no touch, no contact! Only this life with Clifford, this endless spinning of webs of yarn, of the minutiae of consciousness, these stories Sir Malcolm said there was nothing in, and they wouldn't last.* (p.18)

Translation:

Ani ona, ani co jiného nemělo žádnou podstatu... žádný dotyk, žádný kontakt! Jen ten život s Cliffordem, to nekonečné spřádání příze vyprávění, detailních podrobností vědomí, těch příběhů, o kterých sir Malcolm prohlásil, že v nich nic není, že nepřetrvají.

Type of existential construction: bare negative existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*nothing in these stories*)

Commentary:

We deal here with an existential construction integrated into another – elliptical – existential construction. Cf. (There was) *No substance to her or anything.... no touch, no contact!* (There was) *Only this life with Clifford, this endless spinning of webs of yarn, of the minutiae of consciousness, (there were only) these stories Sir Malcolm said there was nothing in, and they wouldn't last.*

The explicit existential construction constitutes a part of a complex sentential postmodification of the element *stories*, cf. *There were only these stories* [about which] *Sir Malcolm said* [that] *there was nothing in*. It is a nominal content clause where *there* constitutes the theme proper and the prepositional phrase (*in* [these stories]) operates as a postmodifying element. The rheme of the construction is constituted by a negative indefinite pronoun and its postmodification. The nature of the postmodifying prepositional phrase needs to be analysed. Despite its strong locative semantics the prepositional phrase tends to act as a modifying element – it is due to the semantic nature of the head (*nothing*) which would be incomplete standing on its own. Such an indefinite pronoun seems to require postmodification in order to provide complete information. The same reasoning underlies treatment of examples 13, 14 above as well as all the examples where the head of notional subject is constituted by an indefinite pronoun and is followed by a prepositional phrase.

Comment on the context-dependence of the prepositional phrase:

The *stories* are mentioned in the preceding context very frequently (see examples 12, 13, 14, 15, 16), they are also referred to in the same sentence (*this endless spinning of webs of yarn, of the minutiae of consciousness*) – for details about semantic affinity see Daneš, 1979: 266 – 7), but above all they are explicitly brought to attention by the immediately preceding (elliptical) existential construction where they constitute the rheme (cf. *There were only these stories*). Obviously, the prepositional phrase is context-dependent and thus forms the element with the least degree of CD within the rheme.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-independent head (*nothing*) + context-dependent postmodification (*in* [these stories]))

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*nothing*) + postmodification (*in* [these stories]))

Commentary on translation:

We need to note down that the Czech translation disregards the ellipted existential construction, instead the construction with the verb *have* is chosen,

Cf. *No substance to her or anything....*

Ani ona, ani co jiného nemělo žádnou podstatu...

(We have noticed the same preference for *have* to a verb of existence in example 19, cf.

Duškova 1994: 536, 14.35.5)

18. *But it was all a dream [...] No substance to her or anything.... no touch, no contact! Only this life with Clifford, this endless spinning of webs of yarn, of the minutiae of consciousness,*

these stories Sir Malcolm said there was nothing in, and they wouldn't last. Why should there be anything in them, why should they last? (p.18)

Translation:

Ani ona, ani co jiného nemělo žádnou podstatu... žádný dotyk, žádný kontakt! Jen ten život s Cliffordem, to nekonečné spřádání příze vyprávění, detailních podrobností vědomí, těch příběhů, o kterých sir Malcolm prohlásil, že v nich nic není, že nepřetrvají. Proč by v nich něco mělo být, proč by měly přetrvávat?

Type of existential construction: interrogative existential with localisation

FSP structure:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*should be*) – **rheme** (*why anything in them*).

Commentary:

The rheme is constituted by the antecedent expressed by interrogative pronoun (*anything*) and its postmodification (*in them*). The pronoun stands in contrast to the preceding negative pronoun *nothing* (rheme of the preceding existential construction). The interrogative pronoun would carry the intonation nucleus: *Why should there be ANYTHING in them?* Commentary on the nature of the prepositional phrase (*in them*) to be found above, in the analysis of example 17.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*anything*) + postmodification (*in them*))

19. *Time went on. Whatever happened, nothing happened, because she was so beautifully out of contact. She and Clifford lived in their ideas and in his books. She entertained... there were always people in the house.* (p.19)

Translation:

Čas plynul. Ať se dělo cokoli, nedělo se nic, poněvadž byla tak nádherně mimo kontakt. Žili s Cliffordem ve svých myšlenkách a v jeho knihách. Ona dělala hostitelku... vždycky někoho měli v domě.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials (adverbial of frequency and localisation)

The FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*always*) – **transition proper** (*were*) – **rheme** (*people*) – **diatheme** (*in the house*).

Commentary:

First of all we shall comment on the role of the adverb of frequency as the FSP role of the rest of the elements in the existential construction seems to be quite straightforward. We subscribe to Firbas's view who notes that adverbials of indefinite time often perform the FSP function of transition proper oriented elements as they are closely related to the verb, the bearer of temporal and modal exponents (TMEs):

“As for the adverbial of indefinite time, it remains closely related to the temporal indication conveyed by the TMEs and is regarded as TrPro if framed in between the subject and the verbal notional component.” (Firbas 1992: 78). The dynamic semantic function of the final adverbial is that of the setting/scene.

Commentary on translation:

We need to note that the Czech translation is not in accordance with the English original in that it does not keep the existential construction. The translation in compliance with the English text would be as follows: *V domě byli vždycky nějakí lidé.*

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (*people*)

final adverbial – adverbial of place, setting

20. *When he rose, he kissed both her hands, then both her feet, in their suede slippers, and in silence went away to the end of the room, where he stood with his back to her. There was silence for some minutes. Then he turned and came to her again as she sat in her old place by the fire.* (p. 27)

Translation:

Když vstal, políbil jí obě ruce, pak obě nohy v semišových trepkách, a mlčky odešel na druhý konec pokoje, kde zůstal stát zády k ní. Nějakou chvíli bylo ticho. Potom se obrátil a přišel zase k ní, jak tu seděla na svém starém místě u krbu.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial of time

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*silence*) – **diatheme** (*for some minutes*)

Commentary:

The rheme of the existential construction is constituted by the notional subject *silence*. It is contextually-independent. In fact, there is *silence* mentioned in the preceding sentence (*in silence went away*), however it is a different “kind” of silence describing a mode of action (he went away silently). The silence (in the room) is new and it is introduced into the discourse by means of the existential construction. The final adverbial (*for some minutes*) constitutes the diatheme of the sentence. Even though the adverbial is context-independent, it has a successful competitor in the context-independent subject towards which the sentence is perspectived (compare the Czech translation where *silence – ticho* is placed in the final position, in harmony with linear arrangement).

The interpretative arrangement of the existential construction then unwinds as follows: **theme proper** (*There*) – **diatheme** (*for some minutes*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*silence*).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (*silence*)

final adverbial – adverbial of time, dynamic semantic function: setting

21. *She was attached to Clifford. He wanted a good deal of her life and she gave it to him. But she wanted a good deal from the life of a man, and this Clifford did not give her; could not. There were occasional spasms of Michaelis. But, as she knew by foreboding, that would come to an end.* (p. 33)

Translation:

Byla připoutaná ke Cliffordovi. Vyžadoval na ní značnou část jejího života a ona mu ji dávala. Ale ona zase vyžadovala značnou část života mužova, a tu jí Clifford nedával; nemohl. Prožila příležitostné křečovité záchvaty s Michaelisem. Ale v předtuše věděla, že to skončí.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*occasional spasms of Michaelis*).

Commentary:

The bare existential construction comprises the existential *There*, transitional *was*, and a composite rhematic part (*occasional spasms of Michaelis*).

Analysis of the composite rheme:

The rheme is constituted by the head noun (*spasms*), which is both premodified (*occasional*) and postmodified (*of Michaelis*).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*occasional*) + head (*spasms*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*of Michaelis*))

22. *There was a gorgeous talk on Sunday evening, when the conversation drifted again to love.* (p.40)

Translation:

K nádherné diskusi došlo v neděli večer, když se konverzace znovu stočila na lásku.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) — **rheme** (*a gorgeous talk*) – **diatheme** (*on Sunday evening*) – **rest of the rheme** (*when the conversation drifted again to love*)

Commentary:

The existential construction opens a new paragraph. Early in the same the chapter the reader is acquainted with a group of aristocratic men, the cronies (as Connie called them privately for herself), who regularly meet at Wragby to discuss various matters of the world, cf. *There were a few regular men, constants; men who had been at Cambridge with Clifford. [...] They all believed in the life of mind.* The sentence under discussion introduces the reader into one of their talks.

The notional subject is context-independent as suggested by the indefinite article. Together with its premodification it constitutes the rhematic part of the construction. Though context-independent, the final adverbial constitutes the diatheme of the construction as the communication is perspectived towards *a talk*. Semantically, the adverbial constitutes the scene. The notion of *talk* is further modified by the adverbial clause of time (*when the conversation drifted again to love*), which informs us about the nature of the *talk* and as such it moves the communication a step further (it is the rheme proper of the whole). The adverbial clause carries the highest degree of CD of the whole.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + modification (*gorgeous*) + head (*talk*) + discontinuous postmodification by a relative clause (*when the conversation drifted again to love*))

final adverbial – adverbial of time, setting

23. *In the wood everything was motionless, the old leaves on the ground keeping the frost on their underside. A jay called harshly, many little birds fluttered. But there was no game; no pheasants. They had been killed off during the war [...].* (p. 47)

Translation:

V lese bylo všechno nehybné, staré listí na zemi zůstávalo zespoda ojíněno. Ozval se drsný křik sojky a třepetání křídel spousty drobného ptactva. Ale nebyla tu žádná zvěř, žádní bažanti. Byli vybiti za války [...]

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential with simple notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*game*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 2 proper** (*pheasants*).

Commentary:

The existential construction comprises a multiple notional subject. The subject is context-independent, semantically it stands for a phenomenon introduced on the scene. The components of the notional subject represent separate intonation phrases with an intonation nucleus on each of the nouns. Both the components are rhematic.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – compound NP (asyndetic coordination)

24. *Clifford's mental life and hers gradually began to feel like nothingness. Their marriage, their integrated life based on a habit of intimacy, that he talked about: there were days when it all became utterly blank and nothing.* (p. 57)

Translation:

Začínala postupně cítit Cliffordův i svůj duševní život jako nicotu. Jejich manželství, jejich celistvý život, založený na důvěrném návyku, o kterém Clifford mluvil: byly dny, kdy jí to všechno připadalo naprosto prázdné a nicotné.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with a postmodified notional subject
FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*days*) – **rheme proper** (*when it all became utterly blank and nothing*).

Commentary:

The notional subject is postmodified. The postmodification is realised by an adjectival relative clause, which constitutes the rheme proper.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (as it is complex, there some context-dependent elements)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*days*) + clausal postmodification (*when it all became utterly blank and nothing*))

25. *And she went through the days drearily. There was nothing now but this empty treadmill of what Clifford called the integrated life, the long living together of two people, who are in the habit of being in the same house with one another.* (p. 63)

Translation:

A procházela pak životem jako pustinou. Nebylo tu už nic než ten prázdný šlapací mlýn, kterému Clifford říkal celistvý život, vleklé spoluzití dvou lidí, kteří jsou zvyklí bydlet spolu v jednom domě.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*nothing*) – **diatheme** (*now*) – **the rest of the rheme** (*but this empty treadmill of what Clifford called the integrated life, the long living together of two people who are in the habit of being in the same house with one another*).

Commentary:

The sentence presents an example of a very complex rhematic part. We encounter here an example of discontinuous postmodification. The discontinuity is due to the adverbial (*now*) preceding the postmodifying element. The principle of end-weight and end-focus apply here. The postmodification of the subject element (*nothing*) is realised by a complex prepositional

phrase consisting of a preposition (*but*) and two nominal elements in apposition (*but this empty treadmill of what Clifford called the integrated life + the long living together of two people, who are in the habit of being in the same house with one another).*

Commentary on translation:

This time our comment does not concern the FSP but the unfortunate translation of the adjunct *integrated*. We believe something like *vzájemně propojený*, a word, which shows the fusion of the two lives, would be more fitting.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (as it is complex, there are some context-dependent elements)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*nothing*) + complex postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*but this empty treadmill of what Clifford called the integrated life, the long living together of two people who are in the habit of being in the same house with one another*))

final adverbial – context-independent, diatheme

00. “*It’s the....it’s the.... pussy!*” *Shudders of subsiding sobs.*

“*What pussy, dear?*”

After a silence the shy fist, clenching on sixpence, pointed into the bramble brake.

“*There!*”

Connie looked and there, sure enough, was a big black cat, stretched out grimly, with a bit of blood on it. (p. 68)

Translation:

„To ... to ta... čičinka.“ Otřesy ustávajících vzlyků.

„Jaká čičinka, miláčku?“

Po chvíli mlčení plachá pěst tisknoucí šestipenci ukázala do ostružiní.

„Támdle!“

Connie se podívala a opravdu, ležela tam velká černá kočka, pochmurně natažená, s krvavou skvrnou na srsti.

Type of existential construction: NOT an existential construction

Commentary:

The construction under study – though it presents an example of a presentation scale – is not an existential construction. The narrative *there* (see the underlined clause) refers to the *bramble break* and the construction is one of locative character. In speech, it would constitute an independent intonation unit and it would be fully pronounced (i.e. without reductions).

Since the past participle (*stretched out grimly*) displays features of adverbial and semantically it provides the reader with more information about the sign that the cat gave we ascribe it the dynamic semantic function of specification. The prepositional phrase (*with a bit of blood on it*) in its adverbial function constitutes the further specification (rheme proper) of the clause:

theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a big black cat*) – **specification** (*stretched out grimly*) – **further specification** (*with a bit of blood on it*)

notional subject (context) – independent (first mention indefinite article)

notional subject (form) – modified by combination of two adjectives (*big black*)

26. *But a child, a baby! that was still one of the sensations. She would venture gingerly on that experiment. There was the man to consider, and it was curious, (27.) there wasn't a man in the world whose children you wanted. Mick's children! Repulsive thought!* (p. 74)

Translation:

Ale dítě, děťátko! To ji pořád ještě vzrušovalo. Velice opatrně se k tomu pokusu odhodlávala. Bylo třeba uvažovat o vhodném muži, a kupodivu, nenašla na světě nikoho, čí dítě by chtěla. Mickovy děti! Odporné pomyšlení!

Type of existential construction:

26. positive bare existential with modified notional subject

27. negative existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern

26. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*the man to consider*)

We need to consider the definiteness in the noun phrase *the man to consider*. There are two possible interpretations.

First, the definite article is anaphoric and it refers to Mick whose name is mentioned at the beginning of the previous paragraph – but what is more, the notion of Mick is very activated in reader's conscience as (s)he understands he is the only man with whom Connie (the heroine considering a child) has a sexual intercourse. The definite article then reflects the situational definiteness and the notional subject is thus context-dependent (situational context-dependence).

Second, the definite article is cataphoric and as such it is not an indicator of context-dependence. Semantically, *the man* refers to a general notion of a male needed to begetting a child. This interpretation is supported by the general human agent in the following clause (*there wasn't a man in the world whose children you wanted*). For this reason we are inclined towards the second interpretation and the notional subject enters our analysis as context independent.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*the*) + head (*man*) + postmodification by means of infinitive (*to consider*))

FSP pattern:

27. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*wasn't*) – **rheme** (*a man*) – **diatheme** (*in the world*) – **the rest of the rheme** (*whose children you wanted*)

The prepositional phrase (*in the world*) needs to be commented on. We are interested in its potential context (in)dependence. The role of the definite article here is to indicate the feature of uniqueness; it is not an indicator of context dependence. As Dušková writes "...the definite article, which indicates a situationally unique object, may determine either a new or a given item." (2000: 47) We need to consider the preceding context –as it is not mentioned there, the prepositional phrase is context independent and as such it enters our analysis.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – postmodified by a possessive relative clause

final adverbial – context-independent, diatheme

Commentary on translation:

We tend to think that in Czech translation the existential structure should have been preserved as well as the general human agent: *Na světě není muž, jehož dítě by člověk chtěl.*

28. Connie and Clifford talk about the game-keeper at Wragby, Mellors. The conversation is started by Connie:

“*The game-keeper, Mellors, is a curious kind of person,*” she said to Clifford, “*he might almost be a gentleman.*”

“*Might he?*” said Clifford. “*I hadn’t noticed.*”

“*But isn’t there something special about him?*” Connie insisted.”

“*I think he’s a quite nice fellow, but I know very little about him. He only came out of the army last year, less than a year ago. From India, I rather think. He may have picked up certain tricks out there, perhaps he was an officer’s servant, and improved on his position. Some of the men were like that. But it does them no good, they have to fall back into their old place when they get home again.*”

Connie gazed at Clifford contemplatively. She saw in him the peculiar tight rebuff against anyone of the lower classes who might be really climbing up, which she knew was characteristic of his breed.

“*But don’t you think there is something special about him?*”, she asked.

“*Frankly, no! Nothing I had noticed.*” (p. 79)

Translation:

„Ale nezdá se Ti, že je na něm něco výjimečného?“ opakovala znovu.

Type of existential construction: existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*is*) – **theme** (*something special about him*)

Because the notional subject is retrievable from the preceding context (see the second question asked by Connie about the game-keeper), the following interpretation seems to be plausible: the rheme proper of the clause is constituted by the verb which is in contrast with the negative verb form. As Clifford obviously disagrees with Connie about the game-keeper, Connie insists (by repetition) on the ascription of an extraordinary quality to the game-keeper. The intonation centre then would be carried by the verb, cf. *But don’t you think there IS something special about him?* and the corresponding Czech translation would be as follows: „Ale nezdá se Ti, že na něm něco výjimečného JE?“ OR „Ale nezdá se Ti, že na něm JE něco výjimečného?“ The final prepositional phrase (*about him*) has the function of postmodification (for commentary on the treatment of the prepositional phrase go to example 17).

What we encounter here is a rare example of a sentence functioning at *the second instance level* where “all its elements are context-dependent but one, which appears in heavy ad-hoc contrast as momentary context independent” (Svoboda, 1981: 4). In our example the contrast is carried by the verb whose polarity constitutes the rheme of the whole.

notional subject (context) – context dependent, indefinite pronoun

notional subject (form) – complex NP (indefinite pronoun (*something*) + postmodification by adjective (*special*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*about him*))

29. Cronies (viz. commentary of example 22) discuss the future of men.

“There might even be real men, in the next phase,” said Tommy. Real, intelligent, wholesome men, and wholesome nice women! Wouldn’t that be a change, an enormous change from us? We’re not men and the women aren’t women. [...]” (p. 86)

Translation:

„Dokonce by se mohli v příští fázi objevit opravdoví muži,“ řekl Tommy. „Opravdoví, inteligentní, zdraví muži a zdravé, milé ženy. Nebyla by to změna, obrovská změna ve srovnání s námi? My nejsme žádní muži, a ženy nejsou ženy. [...]

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

Commentary:

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition proper** (*might*) – **focalizer** (*even*) – **the rest of transition** (*be*) – **rheme** (*real men*) – **diatheme** (*in the next phase*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*real*) + head (*men*))

final adverbial – context-independent, setting

30. *And she drifted on without knowing where she was. Till she came to the clearing, at the far end of the wood, and saw the green-stained stone cottage, looking almost rosy, like the flesh underneath a mushroom, its stone warmed in a burst of sun. And there was a sparkle of yellow jasmine by the door; the closed door.* (p. 99)

Translation:

A u dveří jiskřil žlutý jasmín; u zavřených dveří.

Type of existential construction: existential with a final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a sparkle of yellow jasmine*) – **diatheme** (*by the door*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (the head noun (*a sparkle*) postmodified by prepositional phrase (*of yellow jasmine*))

final adverbial – context-independent (the door: situationally unique object, the definite article does not indicate context-dependence), adverbial of place, setting

31. *“Do you lock the hut when you’re not here?”*

“Yes, your Ladyship.”

“Do you think I could have a key too, so that I could sit here sometimes? Are there two keys?” (p. 104)

Translation:

Jsou k chatě dva klíče?

Type of existential construction: bare existential

Commentary:

FSP pattern:

Transition (*Are*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*two keys*)

Commentary:

The notion of *key* is mentioned in the preceding context ([...] *could I have a key* [...])? yet it is perceived as new due to its contrastive nature; the numeral *two* stands in contrast to one (key available). The **rheme proper** is constituted by the numeral (*two*), which carries the highest degree of CD, cf. *Are there TWO KEYS?* (level stress)

notional subject (context): heterogeneous (the subject of keys brought up in the preceding sentence)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier + head)

32. *So she sat, looking at the rain, listening to the many noiseless noises of it, and to the strange soughing of wind in upper branches, when there seemed to be no wind.* (p. 109)

Translation:

Seděla tak a dívala se do deště, naslouchala jeho četným nehlučným šelestům a šumění větru v hořejších větvích, i když se zdálo, že žádný vítr není.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*seemed to be*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) – **rheme** (*wind*)

Commentary:

The notional subject (*wind*) is fully retrievable from the preceding context and as such it is contextually dependent. The rheme proper of the sentence is constituted by its negative polarity; the existential construction is perspectived towards the negation of the existence of the wind. This interpretation is also supported by the Czech translation where the bearer of negation (negative verb) is placed at the end of the clause.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (*strange soughing of wind* in the preceding clause, context-independent negative determiner)

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*wind*))

33. *She said to Connie one day: “All men are babies, when you come to the bottom of them. Why, I’ve handled some of the toughest customers as ever went down Tevershall pit. But let anything ail them so that you have to do for them, and they’re babies, just big babies. Oh, there’s not much difference in men!”* (p. 115)

Translation:

Řekla jednou Connii: „Všichni mužští jsou jako miminka, když je pořádně prokouknete. Bodejt’, ošetřovala jsem pár nejotrlejších chlapíků, co kdy sfárali do tevershalské šachty. Ale sotva je něco zabolí, že potřebujou, aby se člověk o ně staral, hned jsou z nich miminka, prostě odrostlá miminka. Jsou v tom všichni stejní, jeden jako druhý.

Type of existential construction: negative existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is not*) – **rheme** (*much difference*) – **diatheme** – (*in men*)

The topic of men is clearly established from the very beginning of the talk. The prepositional phrase (*in men*) functions syntactically as an adverbial (transferable to the beginning of the clause and also the semantics of localisation speaks in favour of our interpretation) and semantically (we mean the dynamic semantic function) it constitutes the scene/setting for the phenomenon (*much difference*) introduced.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*much*) + head (*difference*))

Commentary on translation:

We need to note that the existential construction has been abandoned in the Czech translation. Instead, the verbo-nominal qualifying predication has been used.

34. *If old James Allsop hasn't risen from his grave, it's because there's no rising: for he kept her that strict!* (p. 120)

Translation:

Jestli se starý James neobrací v hrobě, tak jenom proto, že to nejde: vždyť ji držel tak zkrátka.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential with notional subject constituted by gerund

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) - **rheme** (*rising*)

We interpret the negative particle as the most dynamic part of the clause. The phenomenon of *rising* is retrievable from the immediately relevant context. The notion of *rising* is established before it is brought up in a new light (and that is its negation). Our interpretation seems to be supported by the Czech translation, which does not even mention the activity of rising from the grave (in Czech realia it is “turning in the grave”) but refers to it by a pronoun and the notion of negation is placed at the end of the clause.

We need to point out that the notional subject is constituted by gerund. We have noticed the gerund in the rhematic subject in examples 43, and 44. Interestingly, the gerund in the role of the notional subject is always negative (see exx. 34, 43, 44).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-independent negative particle (*no*) + context-dependent head (*rising*))

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*rising*))

35. *Now he realized the distinction between popular success and working success: the populace of pleasure and the populace of work. [...] Yes, there were two great groups of dogs wrangling for the bitch goddess: the group of flatterers, those who offered her amusement, stories, films, plays: and the other, much less showy, much more savage breed, those who gave her meat, the real substance of money.* (p. 125 – 126)

Translation:

Ano, byli tu dvě velké smečky psů, kteří se o čubčí bohyni prali mezi sebou: smečka lichotníků, kteří jí nabízeli zábavu, povídky, filmy a hry, a druhá smečka, daleko méně okázalá, daleko divočejšího plemene, která jí poskytovala maso, skutečnou podstatu peněz.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*two great groups of dogs wrangling for the bitch goddess*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*two*) + premodification (*great*) + head (*groups*) + postmodification by a complex prepositional phrase (*of dogs wrangling for the bitch goddess*))

36. *And Mrs. Bolton was carefully dressing him in evening clothes, for there were important business guests in the house.* (p. 131)

Translation:

A paní Boltnová ho pečlivě oblékala do smokingu, protože měli v domě důležité obchodní hosty.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*important business guests*) – **diatheme** (*in the house*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (successive premodification (*important business*) + head (*guests*))

final adverbial – context-dependent due to the broader context, setting

37. *She was kneeling and holding her hands slowly forward, blindly, so that the chicken should run in to the mother-hen again. And there was something so mute and forlorn in her, compassion flamed in his bowels for her.* (p. 136)

Translation:

Klečela a vztahovala obě ruce pomalu vpřed, poslepu, aby kuře mohlo vběhnout zpátky k mámě. A působila při tom tak němě a opuštěně, že se mu útroby sevřely soucitem.

Type of existential construction: existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something so mute and forlorn in her*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + intensifier (*so*) + modification by two adjectives in coordination (*mute and forlorn*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*in her*))

38. *Oh, if only there were other men to be with, to fight that sparkling electric Thing outside there, to preserve the tenderness of life, the tenderness of women, and the natural riches of desire.* (p. 142)

Translation:

Ach, kdyby tu byli ještě jiní muži, kteří by s ním bojovali proti té jiskřící elektrické Věci tam venku, aby zachovali něhu života, něhu žen a přirozené bohatství touhy!

Type of existential construction: existential construction with two final (asyndetically coordinated) adverbials (infinitive of purpose)

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented elements (*if only*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme 1** (*other men to be with*) – **rheme 2 (specification)** (*to fight that sparkling electric Thing outside there*) – **rheme 3 (further specification)** (*to preserve the tenderness of life, the tenderness of women, and the natural riches of desire*)

Commentary:

The clause under examination (underlined) presents an existential construction as a part of an optative sentence.

As for the opening of the clause (*If only*) we take the view of Svoboda stated in Firbas (1992), “I also accept his [Svoboda’s] suggestion that in their ordinary use conjunctions perform the TrPro-function” (see p. 79)

Interestingly, there are two syntactic types of infinitive juxtaposed. First, the postmodifying infinitive *to be with*, second the adverbial infinitive *to fight (that sparkling electric Thing outside there)* semantically stating a purpose. In the final position we find another infinitive of purpose asyndetically coordinated with the preceding one. The adverbials are context-independent and complex. As such they develop the communication further and constitute the specification of the sentence.

From the point of view of dynamic semantic functions, the sentence implements what Chamonikolasová and Adam (2005: 59 – 69) pointed out as **the Extended Presentation Scale**. On a series of examples from both biblical and non-biblical (contemporary) texts they show that apart from the two basic dynamic semantic scales (presentation scale and quality scale) there are two more subtypes – the Combined Quality Scale which “may be identified with the pure Quality Scale” and the Combined Presentation Scale which “may be considered a subtype of the pure Presentation Scale” (62). The Extended Presentation Scale consists of setting (Set), presentation (Pr), phenomenon being introduced onto the scene (Ph), and specification (Sp). Their examples of the scale are structurally the same as our sentence 38. “The Sp-element, realized grammatically in 16 – 18 as an adverbial phrase or clause, carries the highest degree of CD within the sentence: it specifies the presentation of the phenomenon by means of a simile or an explanation of the reason for the presentation” (64). In our example the adverbials specify the purpose for which the game-keeper wishes the presence of *other men*.

The figure below presents the structure of Extended Presentation Scale

Setting	Presentation of Phenomenon	Phenomenon Presented	Specification
(Set)	(Pr)	(Ph)	(Sp)

(after Chamonikolasová, Adam, 2005:62)

The dynamic semantic scale of our sentence is then identified as follows: **scene/setting** (*there*) – **presentation of phenomenon** (*were*) – **phenomenon presented on the scene** (*other men to be with*) – **specification** (*to fight that sparkling electric Thing outside there*) – **further specification** (*to preserve the tenderness of life...*).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (modification (*other*) + head (*men*) + postmodification by infinitive (*to be with*))

final adverbial – adverbial of purpose, context-independent, **specification**

39. “Don’t you care about a’ the risk?” he asked in a husky voice. “You should care. Don’t care when it’s too late!”

There was a curious warning pleading in his voice. (p. 147)

Translation:

„Tobě nezáleží na tom, co riskuješ?“ zeptal se ochraptěle. „To by teda mělo. Abys nenaříkala, až bude pozdě!“

V hlase mu zazněla podivná výstraha.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a curious warning pleading in his voice*)

Commentary:

In the rhematic part, the prepositional phrase (*in his voice*) belongs to the scope of the participial predication and as such it does not constitute an adverbial of the existential

construction as a whole. It is context-dependent which makes it the element with the lowest degree of CD within the rheme.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*curious*) + head (*warning*) + postmodification by participle (*pleading in his voice*))

40. Connie visiting her old acquaintance, a married woman of Connie's age.

There was a great relaying of the table, and the best cups brought and the best teapot. (p. 154)

Translation:

Na stole vypuklo velké nové prostírání a byly přineseny božíhodové šálky a božíhodová konvice.

Type of existential construction: bare existential construction

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a great relaying of the table*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent (the definite article in the postmodifying prepositional phrase (*the table*) indicates situationally unique object, it does not occur in the immediately relevant context and as such it must be treated as context-independent)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*great*) + head (*relaying*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*of the table*))

0B. *He thought of his wife, and always bitterly. She had seemed so brutal. But he had not seen her now since 1915, in the spring when he joined up. Yet there she was, not three miles away, and more brutal than ever.* (p. 167)

Translation:

Myslel na svou ženu, jako vždycky s trpkostí. Připadala mu tak brutální. Ale teď ji neviděl už od roku 1915, kdy se na jaře přihlásil na vojnu. A přece tu byla, ani ne pět kilometrů odsud, a brutálnější než kdy jindy.

Type of existential construction: NOT an existential construction, *there* – of adverbial nature

Commentary:

The communicative aim of the clause is not the one of **introducing** a phenomenon on the scene, but the one of **localizing** the phenomenon (cf. she was less than three miles away)

41. *Well, well! So her ladyship had fallen for him! Well – her ladyship wasn't the first: there was something about him.* (p. 173)

Translation:

Inu, inu! Tak tedy milostivá paní se do něho zakoukala! No – milostivá paní není první; ten chlapík má něco do sebe.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something about him*)

The most problematic interpretation concerning this existential construction seems to be that of the final element, the prepositional phrase (*about him*). Since an indefinite pronoun in the function of the notional subject requires postmodification, we interpret the element as a postmodifying element and thus an element constituting one compact unit with its head. Also, the prepositional phrase when being moved to the beginning of the clause creates an

ungrammatical construction (in contrast to an element of adverbial nature, which can be moved to the beginning without restriction), cf. * *About him there was something*.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*about him*))

42. Squire Winter in a conversation with Clifford:

“*By the way, dear boy, is there any foundation to the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby?*” (p. 178)

Translation:

„Mimochodem, drahý chlapče, mají nějaký podklad ty řeči, že můžeme doufat na Wragby v dědice?“

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Transition (*Is*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*any foundation to the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby*)

Commentary:

The rhematic part is rather complex: prepositional phrase (head (*to*) + NP (*the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby*)). The noun phrase is again rather extensive: head (*the rumour*) + appositional postmodification by nominal content clause (*that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*any*) + head (*foundation*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*to the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby*))

43. *Now, by a subtle pervasion of the new spirit, he had somehow been pushed out. It was he who did not belong any more. There was no mistaking it.* (p. 187 – 188)

Translation:

A teď, s postupným pronikáním nového ducha, byl nějak vytlačován. To on už sem nepatřil. Nedalo se o tom pochybovat.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with notional subject constituted by gerund
FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*mistaking it*)

The sentence represents a modal type (see Dušková 1994: 355, section 12.21.4d), a fact which is aptly reflected in Czech translation (*It wasn't possible to doubt it*).

The rhematic part consists of both context-independent elements (*no mistaking*) and context-dependent elements (*it*). The pronoun represents the statement made in the previous sentence, the **rheme proper** is constituted by the head of the NP (*mistaking*). The rhematic part consists of a gerund and its object.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*mistaking*) + object of the gerund (*it*))

44. “*But he didn't want to **leave** you*” said Connie. [...]

“You feel the pit wanted him killed. You feel the pit fair wanted to kill him. Oh, I felt, if it hadn't been for the pit, an them as runs the pit, there had been no leaving me.” (p. 195)

Translation:

„Ale on vám přece nechtěl odejít,“ namítla Connie. [...]

„Právě z toho je člověku tak hořko. Má pocit, že ho lidi chtěli zabít. Že ho šachta zrovna chtěla zabít. Měla jsem pocit, že kdyby nebylo té šachty a těch, co jí řídí, že by ode mě byl neodešel.“

Type of existential construction: bare existential with notional subject constituted by gerund FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) – **rheme** (*leaving me*)

Commentary:

The existential construction here constitutes a part of a conditional clause (unreal condition referring to the past). The rhematic part consists of both context-independent elements (*no*) and context –dependent elements (*leaving me*).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*leaving*) + object of the gerund (*me*))

We need to point out that in the example above we deal with non-standard English (note *an them as runs the pit*), characteristic of spoken language of lower classes in Lawrence's time.

45. Connie and Mellors are having a conversation. They talk for a while, then the conversation comes to a halt before it starts up again.

There was a pause. (p. 201)

Translation:

Chvíli mlčeli.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with simple NP

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a pause*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*pause*))

46. “There's sure to be a bad nut in a basketful.” (p. 206)

Translation:

„V košíku s jabkama najdeš i padavčata.“

Type of existential construction: existential construction with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition proper** (*is*) – **transition proper oriented element (TrPro)** (*sure to be*) – **rheme** (*a bad nut*) – **diatheme** (*in a basketful*)

Commentary:

The existential construction is employed in an adage. From the FSP point of view it is interesting for having quite an extensive transitional part, which is constituted by the verb of existence on the scene (*is*) and by exponents of modality (*sure to be*). The rhematic part comprises only context-independent elements. The adverbial of place (*in a basketful*) is context-independent as well (i.e. not retrievable from the immediately relevant context), however it is not a successful competitor of the notional subject (*a bad nut*) as the communication is perspektived towards its presentation on the scene.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*bad*) + head (*nut*))
final adverbial – context-independent, setting

47. “*Oh good!*” said Connie. “*If only there aren’t more strikes!*” (p. 215)

Translation:

„Výborně!“ řekla Connie. „Jen aby zase nepřišla nějaká stávka!“

Type of existential construction: bare existential

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented elements (*If only*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*aren’t*)
– **rheme** (*more strikes*)

Commentary:

The example presents an existential construction as a part of an optative sentence. The subject of *strikes* is brought on the scene for the first time. Several chapters earlier a discontent of the miners was mentioned, but only now the discontent has been given a shape of strikes. The notional subject is context-independent.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*more*) + head (*strikes*))

48. “*It is not the individuals that make an aristocracy: it is the functioning of the aristocratic whole. And it is the functioning of the whole mass that makes the common man what he is.*”
“*Then there is no common humanity between us all!*” (p. 220)

Translation:

„Aristokracii netvoří jednotlivci, záleží na funkci aristokracie jako celku. A právě tak funkce davů jakožto celku dělá z prostých lidí to, co jsou.“

„Tak nás tedy všechny nespojuje nic společně lidského?“

Type of existential construction: existential construction with more adverbials (initial and final)

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*Then*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) –
rheme (*no common humanity*) – **diatheme** (*between us all*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + modification (*common*) + head (*humanity*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, setting

49. *She slipped out silently and unseen. There was half a moon shining, enough to make the a little light in the world, not enough to show her up in her dark-grey coat.* (p. 234)

Translation:

Vyklouzla tiše a nepozorovaně. Svítil dost jasně půlměsíc, dost na to, aby trochu viděla na cestu, ale ne natolik, aby bylo vidět ji v tmavošedém plášti.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*half a moon shining*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (partitive quantifier (*half*) + determiner (*a*) + head (*moon*) + postmodification by a participle (*shining*))

50. Connie looks at a photograph of the game-keeper and his ex-wife.

But even in the photograph his eyes were alert and dauntless. And the woman was not altogether a bully, though her jowl was heavy. There was a touch of appeal in her.

Translation:

Ale i na té fotografii měl živé a nebojácné oči. A ona nebyla vůbec semetrika, i když měla masivní čelisti. Bylo na ní něco přitažlivého.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a touch of appeal*) – **diatheme** (*in her*)

notional subject (context) – independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*touch*) + postmodification (*of appeal*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, adverbial of place, setting

Source: Gilbert Keith Chesterton. *The Annotated Innocence of Father Brown*. Oxford: Oxford University Press, 1987

Czech translation: Alena Hartmanová, J. Z. Novák. *Povídky otce Browna/Paradoxy pana Ponda*. Praha: Odeon, 1985.
examples 58 – 63 AH
examples 67 – 71, 100 JZN
Jan Čulík. *Modrý Kříž*. Praha: Lidová demokracie, 1968.
examples 51 - 53
examples 76 – 99

chybí: př. 54, 55, 56, 57, 64, 65, 66, 72, 73, 74, 75

51. *He said that if one had a clue this was the worst way; but if one had no clue at all it was the best, because there was just the chance that any oddity that caught the eye of the pursuer might be the same that had caught the eye of the pursued*. (p. 22)

Translation:

Hájil tento zvrácený postup zcela logicky: Má-li se člověk čeho držet, je prý tohle nejhorší postup; nemá-li, je to prý nejlepší, neboť se může stát, že nějaká zvláštnost zaujme pronásledovatele zrovna tak, jako předtím zaujala pronásledovaného. (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*just*) – **composite rhematic part** (*the chance that any oddity that caught the eye of the pursuer might be the same that had caught the eye of the pursued*)

Analysis of the rhematic part:

The definite article (*the chance*) is obviously cataphoric and as such it does not indicate context dependence. We need to look at the immediately relevant context. There *the chance* has not been mentioned and thus the head of the notional subject is context-independent, a carrier of new information. It is postmodified by means of a content nominal clause whose subject (*any oddity*) is postmodified by a relative adjectival clause within which there is another postmodification by a relative adjectival clause. The complex postmodification contains context-dependent elements (*the pursuer, the pursued*).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*the*) + head (*chance*) + complex postmodification (*that any oddity that caught the eye of the pursuer might be the same that had caught the eye of the pursued*))

52. “*Our cue at last,*” cried Valentin, waving his stick; “*the place with the broken window.*”
“*What window? What cue?*” asked his principal assistant.

“*Why, what proof is there that this has anything to do with them?*” (p. 28)

Translation:

„Kde máte důkaz, že to má s nimi něco společného? (JČ)

Type of existential construction: interrogative bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*what proof*) – **rheme proper** (*that this has anything to do with them*)

Commentary:

I believe (at least as the reader I perceive it so) that the question is perspectived towards the *wh*- expression (*what proof*) which thus constitutes the rheme (the focus). The content nominal clause (discontinuous postmodification) specifies the nature of the *proof* and as such it moves the communication a step forward. It carries the highest degree of CD and thus it constitutes the rheme proper of the whole.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (*what* + head (*proof*) + clausal discontinuous postmodification (*that this has anything to do with them*))

53. *The first he heard was the tail of one of Father Brown's sentences, which ended: "... what they really meant in the Middle Ages by the heavens being incorruptible."*

The taller priest nodded his bowed head and said:

*"Ah, yes, these modern infidels appeal to their **reason**; but who can look at those millions of worlds and not feel that there may well be wonderful universes above us where **reason** is utterly unreasonable?" (p. 34)*

Translation:

„Ano, tito moderní nevěrci se dovolávají rozumu; ale kdo se může dívat na ty milióny světů a nemít pocit, že tam nad námi jsou třeba podivuhodné vesmíry, kde rozum je úplně nerozumným?“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*may well be*) – **rheme** (*wonderful universes*) – **diatheme** (*above us*) – **rheme proper** (*where reason is utterly unreasonable*)

Commentary:

There are two possible interpretations: either the prepositional phrase *above us* may be perceived as an element postmodifying the head *universes* and then all the part following the head would be perceived as successive postmodification, or the prepositional phrase may function as an adverbial and then the final clause would function as a discontinuous postmodification of the head *universes*. Due to the transferability of the prepositional phrase (cf. *Above us there may well be universes where reason is utterly unreasonable*) we decided for the latter interpretation.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-dependent element: *reason*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*wonderful*) + head (*universes*) + discontinuous postmodification (*where reason is utterly unreasonable*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, diatheme

54. *Aristide Valentin, Chief of Paris Police, was late for his dinner, and some of his guests began to arrive before him. These were, however, reassured by his confidential servant, Ivan, the old man with a scar, and a face almost as grey as his moustaches, who always sat at a table in the entrance hall – a hall hung with weapons. Valentin's house was perhaps as peculiar and celebrated as its master. It was an old house, with high walls and tall poplars almost overhanging the Seine; but the oddity – and perhaps the police value – of its architecture was this: that there was no ultimate exit at all except through this front door, which was guarded by Ivan and the armoury. (p. 41)*

Translation:

Type of existential construction: negative existential with final adverbial, extended presentation scale

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*ultimate exit at all*) – **focalizer** (*except*) – **specification** (*through this front door, which was guarded by Ivan and the armoury*)

Commentary:

Adverbial *through this front door* comprises an anaphoric demonstrative *this* which refers back to the text (*the entrance hall*).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + premodification (*ultimate*) + head (*door*) + intensifier (*at all*))

final adverbial – adverbial of exception, not retrievable from the immediately relevant context but comprising context-dependent element → heterogeneous, viz. *this front door, specification*

final adverbial (form) – prepositional phrase the head of which is postmodified by a relative adjectival clause

Example of Extended Presentation Scale

NOTE: It seems that whenever the adverbial in an existential construction is extensive, i.e. it is either realized by a clause (ex. 54) or a heavily postmodified prepositional phrase (ex. 55), it must necessarily constitute the specification.

55. Detective Valentin is examining the scene of a murder in a garden.

Valentin went down on his hands and knees and examined with his closest professional attention the grass and ground for some twenty yards round the body, in which he was assisted less skilfully by the doctor, and quite vaguely by the English lord. Nothing rewarded their grovelling except a few twigs, snapped or chopped into very small lengths, which Valentin lifted for an instant's examination and then tossed away.

“Twigs,” he said gravely; “twigs, and a total stranger with his head cut off; that is all there is on this lawn.” (p. 47)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme (deleted relative [*that*]) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*is*) – **diatheme** (*on this lawn*)

The notional subject is constituted by the covert relative *that*, cf. ... *that is all [that] there is on this lawn*. As it is context-dependent (it stands for *all*, the rheme of the preceding clause), the verb of existence on the scene (*is*) becomes a successful competitor for the rheme. The adverbial is context-dependent (deictic *this*) and constitutes the setting.

notional subject (context) – context-dependent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (omitted relative pronoun [*that*])

final adverbial – context-dependent, setting

56. A comment after a conversation in which a surprising fact in a murder mystery is revealed (for the sake of completeness we have put in a larger chunk of context).

The knock came again and Ivan put in his scarred face.

“Beg pardon, sir,” he said, “but Mr Brayne has left the house.”

“Left!” cried Valentin, and rose for the first time to his feet.

“Gone. Scooted. Evaporated,” replied Ivan, in humorous French. “His hat and coat are gone, too, and I’ll tell you something to cap it all. I ran outside the house to find any traces of him, and found one, and a big trace, too.”

“What do you mean?” asked Valentin.

“I’ll show you,” said his servant, and reappeared with a flashing naked cavalry sabre, streaked with blood about the point and edge. Everyone in the room eyed it as if it were a thunderbolt; but the experienced Ivan went on quietly:

“I found this,” he said, “flung among the bushes fifty yards up the road to Paris. In other words, I found it just where your respectable Mr Brayne threw it when he ran away.

There was again a silence, but of a new sort. (p. 52)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: existential with medial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*again*) – **transition proper** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a silence*).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*silence*))

medial adverbial - TrPrO

57. Father Brown makes a comment seemingly against all logics, a comment which will be explained later in the book. For now, Father Brown’s remark arouses shock and disbelief in his audience.

There was a silence, and then a sudden cackle of almost childish laughter relieved the strain.

The absurdity of Brown’s remark moved Ivan to open taunts. (p. 58)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a silence*).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*silence*))

58. Remarks of the author at the beginning of a new detective story.

In the heart of plutocracy tradesmen become cunning enough to be more fastidious than their customers. They positively create difficulties so that their wealthy and weary clients may spend money and diplomacy at overcoming them. If there were a fashionable hotel in London which no man could enter who was under six foot, society would meekly make up parties of six-foot men to dine in it. (p. 65)

Translation:

Kdyby byl v Londýně exkluzivní hotel, kam by nesměl vkročit žádný muž menší než šest stop, hned by se šviháci poslušně družili do spolků šestistopých, aby tam mohli povečeřet. (Alena Hartmanová)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

Commentary:

Transition proper oriented element (*If*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition proper** (*were*) – **rheme** (*a fashionable hotel*) – **diatheme** (*in London*)

The existential construction is incorporated into a conditional clause.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*fashionable*) + head (*hotel*) + discontinuous postmodification by a relative adjectival clause (*which no man could enter who was under six foot*))

final adverbial – context-independent, setting

59. *After groping through a grey forest of overcoats, he found that the dim cloak room opened on the lighted corridor in the form of a sort of a counter or half-door, like most of the counters across which we have all handed umbrellas and received tickets. There was a light immediately above the semicircular arch of this opening.* (p. 70)

Translation:

Když se kněz protápal šedivým lesem převlečnicků, zjistil, že se šerá šatna otevírá do osvětlené chodby jakýmsi pultem nebo polovičními dveřmi, podobný, většině pultů, přes které jsme už všichni podávali deštníky a dostávali lístky. Hned nad polokruhovým obloukem tohoto otvoru byla lampa. (Alena Hartmanová)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a light*) – **diatheme** (*immediately above the semicircular arch of this opening*)

Commentary:

The main question that arises is that of the FSP of the adverbial. As the anaphoric demonstrative suggests, the adverbial is context-dependent, the fact which is underlined by the Czech equivalent of the clause where the adverbial is placed initially. The sentence is perspective towards the existence of the light rather than towards the location of the light. For these reasons we interpret the adverbial as thematic.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*light*))

final adverbial – adverbial of place, heterogeneous, setting

60. *“Are all your waiters here?” demanded the colonel, in his low, harsh accent.*

“Yes, they’re all here. I noticed it myself,” cried the young duke, pushing the boyish face into the inmost ring. “Always count ‘em as I come in; they look so queer standing up against the wall.

“But surely one cannot exactly remember,” began Mr Audley, with heavy hesitation.

“I remember exactly, I tell you,” cried the duke excitedly. “There never have been more than fifteen waiters at this place, (61.) and there were no more than fifteen to-night, I’ll swear; no more and no less. (p. 76)

Translation:

V tomhle podniku nikdy nebylo víc než patnáct číšníků a já vám odpřisáhnou, že jich ani dneska nebylo víc jak patnáct, a míň taky ne. (Alena Hartmanová)

Type of existential construction:

60. existential with more adverbials, extended presentation scale

61. existential with final adverbial, extended presentation scale

FSP pattern:

60.

Theme proper (*There*) – **specification** (*never*) – **transition** (*have been*) – **rheme** (*more than fifteen waiters*) – **diatheme** (*at this place*)

Commentary:

Counter the most frequent FSP of existential construction, i.e. the notional subject being the element with the highest degree of CD, our sentence (60.) is perspectived towards the adverbial of frequency (*never*). The following points validate our interpretation. First, the adverbial stands in contrast to the final adverbial of the following clause (61.), cf. *never – tonight* and as such it is presented as the newest item of information. In spoken language, this would surely be indicated by the sentence stress placed on the element (*never*). Second, the fact that the adverbial is of higher informative value than the notional subject is underlined by the context in which the notional subject seems to be rather well established (and thus context-dependent), despite the fact the explicit number of waiters is mentioned for the first time. Cf. *Are all your waiters here?* and *Always count ‘em as I come in.* Indeed, the notional subject is heterogeneous and thus it carries lower degree of CD than the adverbial of frequency which is not only new but also contrastive.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (comparative with quantifier (*more than fifteen*) + head (*waiters*))

medial adverbial – adverb of frequency, context-independent, **specification**

final adverbial – context-dependent

61.

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*no more than fifteen*) – **specification** (*tonight*)

In our example the whole of the sentence is repeated except of the final adverbial, which stands in contrast to the adverbial of frequency in the preceding clause (*never*) and towards which the communication is perspectived. However, an emphasis on *no more* element is indicated by the repetition of the element, cf. *I’ll swear; no more and no less.* We deal here with a clause which comprises two intonation peaks (*no more* and *tonight*) indicating two foci. It is the phenomenon which Cambridge Grammar calls ‘divided focus’, cf. 18.17 pp. 1372-1374.

Some remarks on the transition.

In fact, the temporal category of the verb changed from the present perfect tense in the preceding clause to the past simple tense. This only confirms the dynamic semantic function of **transition** that the verb performs. What we mean is that it neatly shows that the verb points towards something new coming, as Firbas puts it “the TMEs (i.e. temporal and modal exponents born by the verb) initiate the core-constituting process and at the same time serve as a link and a boundary between elements that can be regarded as foundation-laying and those that can be regarded as core-constituting.” (Firbas, 1992: 71, the explanatory note in parenthesis is added by the author of this study). In our example the past simple form of the verb signals the change from *never* to *tonight* and thus it anticipates the new element.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + quantifier with comparative (*more than fifteen*))

final adverbial – context-independent, **specification**

62. “A crime,” he said slowly, “is like any other work of art. Don’t look surprised; crimes are by no means the only works of art that come from an infernal workshop. But every work of art, divine or diabolic, has one indispensable mark – I mean, that the centre of it is simple, however much the fulfilment may be complicated. Thus, in Hamlet, let us say, the grotesqueness of the grave-digger, the flowers of the mad girl, the fantastic finery of Osric, the pallor of the ghost and the grin of the skull are all **oddities** in a sort of tangled wreath round one plain tragic figure of a man in black. Yes,” he went on, seeing the colonel look up in some wonder, “the whole of this tale turns on a black coat. In this, as in Hamlet, there are the rococo excrescences – yourselves, let us say. (63.) There is the dead waiter, who was there when he could not be there. (pp. 80 – 81)

Translation:

Stejně jako v Hamletovi i tady máme barokní ornamenty – řekněme vás. Máme tu toho mrtvého číšníka, který byl tam, kde být nemohl. (Alena Hartmanová)

Type of existential construction:

62. existential with final adverbial

63. bare existential with modified notional subject

Commentary:

62.

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*the rococo excrescences – yourselves*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*let us say*)

The notional subject is constituted by two elements (*the rococo excrescences* and *yourselves*) which are in appositional relationship. The elements in apposition constitute one communicative unit (Dušková 1994: 499, section 13.61). The subject is presented as context-dependent – note the anaphoric definite article, which indicates referential identity with *oddities*. In principle, the second element is context-dependent – the personal pronoun (*yourselves*) is deictic (and thus inherently context-dependent as the referent (in our case referents) is always present in the discourse, it is the starting point from which the communication takes its course. Yet, the way the notion of oddities is re-expressed is absolutely new, it enounces new information and as such it must be treated as a rhematic element.

As far as the final adverbial is concerned, it performs the function of a sentence modifier. It assesses the factivity of the content of the clause (and as such it is a carrier of epistemic modality). These content disjuncts are often realised by a clause (as in our example). They usually take the final position (Dušková 1994: 479). In their function they come close to TMEs and constitute the transition proper oriented element (Firbas, 1992: 77–79).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (*the rococo excrescences – yourselves*)

final adverbial – TrPro, non-integrated adverbial

63.

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*the dead waiter, who was there when he could not be there*)

Commentary:

We need to comment on the context-(in)dependence of the notional subject (*the waiter*). Despite its rhematic nature it is referred to as a contextually bound element by the definite article. The first mention of the dead waiter was made at the beginning of the detective story (p. 76) when the protagonists learned that silver cutlery of great value had been stolen by a false waiter who had killed one of the waiters of the restaurant to get access to it. The notional subject thus depends on a broader context for its interpretation. Once again we are presented with the fact that the concept of newness does not necessarily overlap with the concept of context independence.

As Daneš observes, “the concept of newness concerns two independent aspects: (1) ‘new’ in the sense of ‘not mentioned in the preceding context,’ (2) in the sense of ‘related as Rheme to a Theme to which it has not yet been related’” (In Skänderi 1997:58). In our example we witness the second aspect. Skänderi also quotes Makovec-Černe, who writes that would-be rhematic information “braucht nicht unbedingt immer ‘neu’ zu sein. Das bedeutet, dass das Rhema auch etwas schon Bekanntes und vorher Erwähntes zum Ausdruck bringt, aber das wird auf eine neue Art und Weise spezifiziert” (In Skänderi 1997:58). And above all, Firbas’s concept of **immediately relevant context** (1992) needs to be applied. Since FSP concerns “the organization of the sentence as implemented and/or perceived at the moment just described” (p. 22), the context needs to be narrowed, “its relevance being assessed in relation to the point in the flow of communication at which a new sentence is produced” (p.22).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*the*) + premodification (*dead*) + head (*waiter*) + complex postmodification realized by a relative adjectival clause and adverbial clause of time (*who was there when he could not be there*))

64. *In the large entrance hall of the house there was ample room even for Sir Leopold and the removal of his wraps.* (p. 88)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*In the large entrance hall of the house*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*ample room*) – **focalizer** (*even*) – **rheme proper** (*for Sir Leopold and the removal of his wraps*)

Commentary:

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*ample*) + head (*room*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*for Sir Leopold and the removal of his wraps*))

65. Guests together with the host “*in a good old house near Putney*” decided to perform a pantomime to amuse both their audience and themselves.

The Spectators were few, relations, one or two local friends, and the servants; Sir Leopold sat in the front seat, his full and still fur-collared figure largely obscuring the view of the little cleric behind him; but it has never been settled by artistic authorities whether the cleric lost

much. The pantomime was utterly chaotic, yet not contemptible; there ran through it a rage of improvisation which came chiefly from Crook the clown. (p. 94)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: existential with medial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*ran*) – **diatheme** (*through it*) – **rheme** (*a rage of improvisation which came chiefly from Crook the clown*)

Commentary:

We encounter here an adverbial (*through it*) placed medially, i.e. before the notional subject. Its position is due to the heavy postmodification of the notional subject – the principle of end-weight as well as the principle of end-focus is operative here. The adverbial is context-dependent and constitutes the setting of the presentation scale.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*rage*) + complex postmodification (*of improvisation which came chiefly from Crook the clown*))

medial adverbial – context-dependent, setting

66. “*He was?*” called Fischer inquiringly.

“*A real policeman,*” said Father Brown, and ran away into the dark.

There were hollows and bowers at the extreme end of that leafy garden, in which the laurels and other immortal shrubs showed against sapphire sky and silver moon, even in that midwinter, warm colours of the south. (pp. 97 – 98)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

Commentary:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*hollows and bowers*) – **diatheme** (*at the extreme end of that leafy garden*) – **rest of the rheme** (*in which the laurels and other immortal shrubs showed against sapphire sky and silver moon, even in that midwinter, warm colours of the south*)

We encounter here an example of discontinuous postmodification (note the relative clause postmodifying the subject). The relative clause constitutes one communicative unit together with the element which it modifies, in our case it is the communicative unit of the rheme.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – compound NP (*hollows and bowers*)

final adverbial – heterogeneous (context-dependent element: *that leafy garden*, anaphoric *that*)

67. “*You don’t give me any time to think,*” she said. [when asked to marry the young man, her partner in the conversation]

“*I’m not such a fool,*” he answered; “*that’s my Christian humility.*”

She was still looking at him; but she had grown considerably graver behind the smile.

“*Mr Angus,*” she said steadily, “*before there is a minute more of this nonsense I must tell you something about myself as shortly as I can.*” (p. 104)

Translation:

„Pane Angusi,“ řekla pevně, „dřív než budete v tom bláznovství pokračovat, musím vám co nejstručněji povědět něco o sobě.“ (J. Z. Novák)

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*Before*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*a minute more of this nonsense*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (constituted by both context-dependent and context-dependent elements)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*minute*) + adverb of degree (*more*) + the standard of comparison constituted by prepositional phrase (*of this nonsense*))

initial adverbial – temporal adverbial, transition proper oriented element

68. “*I heard James Welkin laugh as plainly as I hear you speak,*” said the girl steadily. “*There was nobody there, for I stood just outside the shop at the corner, and could see down both streets at once.*” (p. 108)

Translation:

„Slyšela jsem smích Jamese Welkina zrovna tak jasně, jako teď slyším váš hlas,“ řekla dívka s naprostou jistotou. „Nikdo tam nebyl, stála jsem totiž na rohu před krámem, takže jsem viděla do obou ulic.“ (J. Z. Novák)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

Commentary:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*nobody*) – **diatheme** (*there*)

In one clause we encounter two types of *there*. At the beginning of the clause stands existential *there* filling the position of the subject while in the final position adverbial *there* occurs. Existential *there* differs from adverbial *there* in its reduced pronunciation and in its non-referential nature. While adverbial *there* substitutes a locative element (in our example *there* means *outside the shop*), existential *there* merely indicates the scene. Firbas observes that as well as the pronouns by which the notions of speaker/writer and listener/reader are referred to, the existential *there* can be introduced into the discourse directly, not pronominalizing any antecedents (predecessors)” (1992: 24). Furthering his ideas on the issue, Firbas writes, “Though semantically very weak, it is not totally stripped of all meaning. As an integral part of the existential construction, it acts as an indicator of a scene expressed by a genuine adverbial of place.” (1992: 24)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (indefinite pronoun (*nobody*))

69. *The policeman was even more emphatic. He said he had had experience of crooks of all kinds, in top hats and in rags; he wasn't so green as to expect suspicious characters to look suspicious; he looked out for anybody, and, so help him, there had been nobody.* (p. 114)

Translation:

Strážník to tvrdil ještě důrazněji. Prohlásil, že se vyzná ve všech možných lumpech, ať už nosí cylindry nebo cáry, a že není takový zelenáč, aby očekával, že podezřelá individua budou vypadat podezřele; byl prý připraven na všechno, ale bůh ví, že neviděl nic. (J. Z. Novák)

Type of existential construction: bare existential

Commentary:

Existential construction is incorporated into reported speech.

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme** (*nobody*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (indefinite pronoun (*nobody*))

70. "Well, there it is. The poor fellow has evaporated like a cloud and left a red streak on the floor. The tale does not belong to this world."

"There is only one thing to be done," said Flambeau, "whether it belongs to this world or the other, I must go down and talk to my friend." (p. 117)

Translation:

„Zbývá jen jedno," pravil Flambeau. (J. Z. Novák)

Type of existential construction: bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one thing to be done*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (numeral (*one*) + head (*thing*) + postmodification by infinitive (*to be done*))

71. "A person can't be quite alone in a street a second before she receives a letter. She can't be quite alone in a street when she starts reading a letter just received. There must be somebody pretty near her; he must be mentally invisible." (p. 119)

Translation:

Někdo musel být moc blízko u ní, jenže byl psychicky neviditelný. (J. Z. Novák)

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **rheme** (*must be*) – **diatheme** (*somebody pretty near her*)

A note on the interpretation of the final '*pretty near her*' has to be made. (The pronoun '*her*' refers to the female character who is haunted by a supposedly invisible man.) Its function is that of postmodification where preceding *somebody* is being specified. The existential construction is perspectived towards the modal verb. The verb carries a contrastive stress (it stands in contrast to the preceding *can't be quite alone* in the two preceding sentences). The modality constitutes the rheme proper of the whole.

Our interpretation is in accord with the Czech translation, which also elevates the verb to the rhematic section (note the italics which has the highlighting effect).

Note on translation:

We need to note down that the grammatical tense of the original (the present) is not observed in the Czech translation (the past).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (indefinite pronoun (*somebody*) + postmodification (*pretty near her*))

72. *The rhyme in the country-side attested the motive and the result of their machinations candidly:*

'As green sap to the simmer trees

Is red gold to the Ogilvies.'

For many centuries there had never been a decent lord in Glengyle Castle; and within the Victorian era one would have thought that all eccentricities were exhausted. (p. 122)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: negative existential with more adverbials (initial temporal adverbial and final locative adverbial)

Commentary:

Theme (*For many centuries*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had never been*) – **rheme** (*a decent lord*) – **diatheme** (*in Glengyle Castle*)

Our example is found at the beginning of a detective story (*The Honour of Israel Gow*). To be more specific, it opens the third paragraph of the story while the previous paragraph starts as follows: *The priest had snatched a day from his business in Glasgow to meet his friend Flambeau, the amateur detective, who was at Glengyle Castle with another more formal officer investigating the life and death of the late Earl of Glengyle.* (p. 121)

This shows that the final adverbial in our example denotes a notion highly activated in the reader's mind. It is also well established in a broader context as Glengyle Castle is the location of the crime to be investigated in our story. Indeed, the final adverbial is context-dependent and it fulfils the dynamic semantic function of the setting.

The initial adverbial belongs to the thematic section as its position suggests. Firbas observes, "A loosening of the relationship of the adverbial to the verb opens the door to the operation of linear modification and may induce a context-independent adverbial to serve as a setting when it occurs initially, or as a specification when it occurs close to end position or finally." (1992: 50 – 51)

Having two adverbials in one existential clause sparks thoughts on their mutual relation in terms of their communicative dynamism. We share Firbas's view that linearity plays the decisive role in indicating the degree of communicative dynamism of the initial adverbial. The position suggests its low degree of CD as well as it suggests a higher degree of CD in the adverbial placed finally. The fact that both the adverbials belong to the thematic section confirms the suggestions that the theme is a scalar phenomenon; in our example the following scale is employed: **theme proper** (*there*) – **the rest of the theme** (*For many centuries – diatheme* (*in Glengyle Castle*))

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*decent*) + head (*lord*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, setting

73. "[...] *Now I wish you to note how very much queerer all this is than anything we anticipated. For the central riddle we are prepared; we have all seen at a glance that there was something wrong about the last earl. [...]*" (p. 125)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something wrong about the last earl*)

The final prepositional phrase is context-dependent as the part from which our example comes from deals with curious inheritance of the just deceased earl. Syntactically it complements the adjective *wrong*, it specifies the direction in which the adjective operates. It completes the semantics of the adjective and it is obligatorily attached to the adjective.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (containing a context-dependent component)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + grammatical postposition of adjectival modifier (*wrong*) + complementation of *wrong* (*about the earl*))

74. “Mr Craven,” said he, talking like a man ten years younger, “you have got a legal warrant, haven’t you, to go up and examine that grave? The sooner we do it the better, and get to the bottom of this horrible affair. If I were you I should start now.”

“Now,” repeated the astonished detective, “and why now?”

“Because this is serious,” answered Brown; “This is not spilt snuff or loose pebbles, that might be there for a hundred reasons. There is only one reason I know of for *this* being done; and the reason goes down to the roots of the world. These religious pictures are not just dirtied or torn or scrawled over, which might be done in idleness or bigotry, by children or by Protestants. [...]” (p. 128)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one reason I know of for **this** being done*)

Commentary:

The prepositional phrase operates as a postmodifying element (what reason? reason for this being done) and as such it constitutes one FSP unit with its head. Within that unit, the pronoun *this* carries the highest degree of CD as it is suggested in print by *italics* (since all our examples are in italics we put the word *in bold* to preserve the optical accentuation of the element). It is this element that carries the contrastive stress and it constitutes the rheme proper of the existential construction.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (including a context-dependent element)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (numeral (*one*) + head (*reason*) + postmodification by restrictive relative clause (*I know of*) + further postmodification by means of prepositional phrase (*for **this** being done*))

75. They stood listening to the loud woods and the shrieking sky quite foolishly, like exhausted animals. Thought seemed to be something enormous that had suddenly slipped out of their grasp.

“There are three headless men,” said Father Brown, “standing round this open grave.” (p. 132)

Translation:

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*three headless men standing round this open grave*)

Commentary:

The non-finite participial clause (*standing round this open grave*) constitutes postmodification of men, cf. *There are three headless men who are standing round this open grave*. The final prepositional phrase belongs to the scope of the participial predication and as such it constitutes a part of the rheme.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-dependent element: *this open grave*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (numeral (*three*) + premodification (*headless*) – head (*men*) + postmodification by participle (*standing round this open grave*))

76. *Anyone passing the house on the Thursday before Whit-Sunday at about half-past four p.m. would have seen the front door open, and Father Brown, of the small church of St. Mungo, come out smoking a large pipe in company with a very tall French friend of his called Flambeau, who was smoking a very small cigarette. These persons may or may not be of interest to the reader, but the truth is that they were not the only interesting things that were displayed when the front door of the white-and-green house was opened. There are further peculiarities about this house, which must be described to start with, not only that the reader may understand this tragic tale, but also that he may realise what it was that the opening of the door revealed.* (p. 140)

Translation:

Ale dříve než se pustíme dál, je třeba popsat další zvláštnosti budovy, jednak proto, aby čtenář pochopil tento tragický příběh, jednak proto, aby si dovedl představit, co všechno bylo otevřenými dveřmi vidět. (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*further peculiarities about this house, which must be described to start with*)

Commentary:

We need to comment on the prepositional phrase *about this house*. In our view the prepositional phrase semantically complements the head of the notional subject, viz. *peculiarities*; it specifies what *peculiarities* are meant. We treat the phrase as a postmodifying element.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*further*) + head (*peculiarities*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*about this house*) + postmodification by relative adjectival clause (*which must be described to start with*))

77. *“What the devil are you talking about?” said the doctor with a loud laugh. Flambeau spoke quietly to him in answer. “The Father sometimes gets this mystic’s cloud on him,” he said, “but I give you fair warning that I have never known him have it except when there was some evil quite near.”* (p.144)

Translation:

„Páter Brown mívá občas takové mystické předtuchy,“ vysvětloval klidně Flambeau. „Ale ujišťuji vás ze zkušenosti, že takhle mluví, jen když je nablízku něco zlého.“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*when*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*some evil*) – **diatheme** (*quite near*)

Commentary:

The final adverbial comprises deictic *near*, an inherently context-dependent element (another example of deictic element was commented upon in example 62).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*some*) + head (*evil*))

final adverbial – adverbial of place, heterogeneous, setting

78. “My father,” said Flambeau in French, “what is the matter with you?”
Father Brown was silent and motionless for half a minute, then he said: “Superstition is irreligious, but there is something in the air of this place. I think it’s that Indian – at least, partly.” (p. 147)

Translation:

Pověra je bezbožná, ale tady je něco ve vzduchu. Myslím, že je to ten Ind – alespoň částečně. (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*is*) – **rheme** (*something in the air of this place*)

Commentary:

We need to note that the indefinite pronoun *something* cannot constitute the rheme on itself due to its semantic emptiness (viz. the note on the notional subject below). Its semantics needs to be completed by some postmodification, in our case the prepositional phrase *in the air of this place*. These two elements (head *something* and its postmodification) together constitute one FSP unit, the rheme.

Note on the notional subject

In our analysis we rely heavily on Firbas’s theory of FSP as it is distinguished by extraordinary observations and as it provides answers to our questions about FSP. When examining the FSP of an object in a sentence, Firbas comments on indefinite pronoun *something* as on an element which does not develop the communication further. He writes, “It usually acts as a semantic slot filler, leaving it to another element in the flow of communication to particularize the meaning unexpressed” (1992: 45, point 1). In our case it is the prepositional phrase *in the air of this place* following the indefinite pronoun that “particularizes the meaning unexpressed”.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (including a context-dependent element)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (indefinite pronoun (*something*) + postmodification (*in the air of this place*))

79. “Flambeau,” said Father Brown, “there is a long seat there under the veranda, where we can smoke out of the rain. You are my only friend in the world, and I want to talk to you. Or, perhaps, be silent with you.” (p. 153)

Translation:

„Navrhuji,“ obrátil se otec Brown k Flambeauovi, „abychom si sedli na lavici na verandu, kde neprší a kde si můžeme zakouřit. Jste mým jediným přítelem a rád bych s vámi mluvil. Nebo možná i mlčel.“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*a long seat*) – **diatheme** (*there under the veranda*) – **rest of the rheme** (*where we can smoke out of the rain*)

Commentary:

The notional subject together with its discontinuous postmodification constitutes the rheme of the whole. Interestingly, the adverbial of place is constituted by two elements in appositional relationship where the deictic *there* is specified by a genuine adverb of place.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-dependent elements: *we, the rain*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*long*) + head (*seat*) + postmodification by adverbial clause (*where we can smoke out of the rain*))

final adverbial – adverbial of place, context-dependent, setting

final adverbial (form) – specifying apposition (*there* is specified by *under the veranda*)

80. “*There were twenty-three snipped papers,*” resumed Brown unmoved, “*and only twenty-two pieces snipped off. Therefore one of the pieces had been destroyed, probably that from the written paper. Does that suggest anything to you?*” (p. 155)

Translation:

„Je tam třiadvacet sestřihnutých listů,“ pokračoval Brown, nedávaje se vyvést z míry, „a jen dvaadvacet ustřižených rohů.“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with multiple notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*twenty-three snipped papers and only twenty-two pieces snipped off*)

rheme 2

rheme 1

Commentary:

The notional subject is framed in a coordinative structure where the second element due to the linear arrangement carries a higher degree of CD.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – compound NP (*twenty-three snipped papers and only twenty-two pieces snipped off*)

81. “*By George!*” cried Flambeau; “*here is the place, after all! Here is Reed Island, if ever there was one. Here is Reed House, if it is anywhere.*” (p. 163)

Translation:

„Zpropadeně!“ zvolal Flambeau. „Tak tady to je. Tady je Rákosový ostrov, jestli vůbec nějaký existuje, a tady je Rákosový dům, jestli ho máme vůbec někde hledat.“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: bare existential

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented elements (*if ever*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*was*) – **diatheme** (*one*)

Commentary:

The existential construction is perspectived towards the polarity of the verb. It is the existence of the place that is being stressed rather than the place itself. Once again, we encounter an existential construction whose main communicative aim is not that of introducing a phenomenon on the scene but that of emphasis of its existence on the scene (for more see examples 16, 82, or 93). This emphasis is indicated by context-dependence of the notional subject/phenomenon existing on the scene (the proform *one* is anaphoric – it repeats the notion of *Reed Island* in the preceding clause). The verb having no successful competitors carries the highest degree of CD and hence it constitutes the rheme.

notional subject (context) – context-dependent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (proform *one*)

82. “*He is right enough in one way, your friend. He says it would be hard to pick out the good and bad brothers. Oh, it would be hard, it would be mighty hard, to pick out the good one.*”

“*I don’t understand you,*” said Father Brown, and began to move away.

The woman took a step nearer to him, with thunderous brows and a sort of savage stoop, like a bull lowering his horns.

“*There isn’t a good one,*” she hissed. (83.) “*There was badness enough in the captain taking all that money, but I don’t think* (84.) *there was much goodness in the prince giving it. The captain’s not the only person with something against him.*” (p. 166)

Translation:

„Žádný z nich není dobrý,“ zasyčela. Bylo dost špatné, že ho kapitán připravil o tolik peněz, ale princ mu je také, myslím, nedal z velké dobroty.“

82.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*isn’t*) – **diatheme** (*a good one*)

Commentary:

The rheme of the clause is constituted by the polarity of the verb. The verb does not have any successful competitors, as the notional subject is context dependent. The clause is perspectived towards the negative polarity of the verb.

notional subject (context) – context-dependent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*good*) + head (*one*))

Commentary on translation:

The original existential construction of the original text (English) is substituted by a verbo-nominal predication where there is a relation of qualification by non-genuine classification.

83.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*badness enough in the captain taking all that money*)

Commentary:

The final prepositional phrase operates as a postmodifying element which specifies what kind of *badness* the speaker means. It comprises context-dependent elements ‘*the captain*’ and ‘*that money*’ which were introduced into the flow of narration two paragraphs earlier, “*He [the butler of the house in which the prince of 84 lived] betrayed a sullen and almost animal affection for his master [the prince]; who, he said, had been very badly treated. The chief offender seemed to be his highness’s brother, whose name alone would lengthen the old man’s lantern jaws and pucker his parrot nose into a sneer. Captain Stephen was a ne’er-do-well, apparently, and had drained his benevolent brother of hundreds and thousands; forced him to fly from fashionable life and live quietly in this retreat.*” (p. 165) Throughout the two paragraphs the notion of the captain keeps being reminded, for instance 6 sentences further from the above cited passage (p. 165), “*the brothers Saradine*”, who are the same referents as *the captain* and *the prince* in 83 and 84 respectively, are brought up and then referred to by the speaker of the direct speech above (*He says it would be hard to pick out the good and bad brothers. Oh, it would be hard, it would be mighty hard, to pick out the good one*). Hence the content-dependence of the two elements.

The quantifier before the notional subject of 83 stands in contrast to the quantifier before the notional subject of 84. The effect of this is nullification of the antonymous relationship of the two notional subjects, cf. *badness enough* is synonymous to *not much goodness*.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (indicating contrast, the information of contrast is the new, irretrievable item of information)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*badness*) + postmodified determiner (*enough*) + postmodification (*in the captain taking all that money*))

84.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*much goodness in the prince giving it*)

Commentary:

The existential construction is embedded in a content nominal clause, which constitutes a clausal object of the preceding main clause *I don't think*.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (new element: the contrast, the context-dependent component: *the prince giving it*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*much*) + head (*goodness*) + postmodification (*in the prince giving it*))

85. *The prince made an explicable noise like an animal; in his shadowed face the eyes were shining queerly. A new and shrewd thought exploded silently in the other's mind. Was there another meaning in Saradine's blend of brilliancy and abruptness? Was the prince – Was he perfectly sane?* (p. 169)

Translation:

Má snad směs nádhery a neurovnanosti u Saradina ještě jiný význam? Je princ – zcela normální? Neboť opakoval víckrát, než je přirozené pro běžný rozhovor: „Nepravou osobu, nepravou osobu...“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: interrogative existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*Was*) – **rheme** (*another meaning in Saradine's blend of brilliancy and abruptness?*)

Commentary:

The comparative reference of *another* points about one page back into the text where both brilliancy and abruptness of Saradine were introduced into the narration. Now, Father Brown (the detective and the main character of the stories and the referent of “*in the other's mind*”) contemplates the possibility of such a blend being the outcome of madness.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (*another* + head (*meaning*) + postmodification (*in Saradine's blend of brilliancy and abruptness*))

86. “*Your son is outside,*” he said without wasting words; *either he or the prince will be killed. Where is Mr Paul?*

“*He is at the landing-stage,*” said the woman faintly. “*He is – he is – signalling for help.*”

“Mrs Anthony,” said Father Brown seriously, *there is no time for nonsense*. My friend has his boat down the river fishing. Your son’s boat is guarded by your son’s men. (87.) *There is only this one canoe*; what is Mr Paul doing with it?” (pp. 171 – 172)

Translation:

„Paní Anthonyová,“ řekl otec Brown vážně. „Není čas na hlouposti. Můj přítel je s lodí na řece a chytá ryby. Lod’ vašeho syna hlídají Italové. Zbývá jen jediný člun; co s ním Pavel dělá?“ (JČ)

86.

Type of existential construction: existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*no time for nonsense*)

Commentary:

The final prepositional phrase constitutes the most dynamic element within the rheme as it postmodifies the head of the NS (*no time*).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*time*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*for nonsense*))

87.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*this one canoe*)

Commentary:

The notional subject presents known information, yet it carries the highest degree of CD. Its high informative value rests in the emphasis which the element presents and which is indicated by the focalizer *only*. It is the emphasis (this one canoe, i.e. there is not any other left) which brings the new into the flow of communication and due to which the notional subject constitutes the rheme.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (predominantly context-dependent but providing irretrievable information of emphasis)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (demonstrative (*this*) + numerative (*one*) + head (*canoe*))

88. “ [...] *The fact is that he began to flee for his life, passing from place to place like a hunted criminal; but with one relentless man upon his trail. That was Prince Paul’s position, and by no means a pretty one. The more money he spent on eluding Antonelli the less he had to silence Stephen. The more he gave to silence Stephen the less chance there was of finally escaping Antonelli. [...]*” (p. 176)

Translation:

„Čím víc peněz ho stál útek před Antonellim, tím méně jich měl, aby umlčel Štěpána. A čím víc jich dával Štěpánovi, tím menší byla naděje, že unikne Antonellimu.“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*the less chance of finally escaping Antonelli*)

Commentary:

The existential construction is embedded in a comparative clause. We encounter here a fronted notional subject. The fronting is a result of embedding the subject into the correlative pair **the more the less**. As a consequence, there is a discontinuous postmodification (*of finally escaping Antonelli*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (the correlative pair *the...the* operates here as an adverb *the more...the less*, i.e. it does not imply context-dependence, however, there is a context dependent element: *Antonelli*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*the*) + comparative (*less*) + head (*chance*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*of finally escaping Antonelli*))

89. *But like more than one of the really ancient houses, they had rotted in the last two centuries into mere drunkards and dandy degenerates, till there had even come a whisper of insanity. (90.) Certainly there was something hardly human about the colonel's wolfish pursuit of pleasure, and his chronic resolution not to go home till morning had a touch of the hideous clarity of insomnia. (p. 180)*

Translation:

V posledních dvou stoletích však, jako ne jeden z těchto skutečně starých rodů, prohnili na pouhé opilce a degenerované hejsky a začalo se šeptat o slabomyslnosti. Rozhodně bylo málo lidského na plukovníkově vlčí honbě za radovánkami a jeho chronické rozhodnutí chodit domů až ráno ukazovalo na potíže s nespavostí. (JČ)

89.

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*till*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had*)
focalizer (*even*) – **transition** (*come*) – **rheme** (*a whisper of insanity*)

Commentary:

Interestingly, the verb of appearance on the scene is not 'be' as we are used to in existential constructions, but the verb 'come' is employed.

Another thing that strikes our attention is the placement of the focalizer, which does not immediately precede the rheme, as we would expect. Upon a cursory inquiry into the nature of focus particles we learn that their most frequent position is precisely that "inside the auxiliary complex" and that they "may focus on any part of a sentence except the auxiliary verb".

(König 1991: 21 – 23, part 2.3.1) Still, the position of the focalizer may be significant.

Professor Dušková, for example, suggests that it indicates that apart from the subject the notional part of the verb is also context-independent (personal consultation, 10.5.2006)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*whisper*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*of insanity*))

Commentary on translation:

The focalizer was not made use of in the Czech translation.

90.

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*Certainly*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something hardly human about the colonel's wolfish pursuit of pleasure*)

Commentary:

The final prepositional phrase operates as a postmodifying element and as such it belongs to the rhematic section.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + postmodification (*hardly human*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*about the colonel's wolfish pursuit of pleasure*))

91. *He could only stammer out: "My brother is dead. What does it mean? What is this horrible mystery?" There was an unhappy silence; and then the cobbler, the most outspoken man present, answered: "Plenty of horror, sir," he said, "but not much mystery."* (p. 184)

Translation:

Vypravil ze sebe pouze: „Bratr je mrtev! Jak se to mohlo stát? Jaká hrozná záhada!“ Nastalo trapné mlčení a pak švec, nejotevřenější ze všech přítomných, řekl: „Hrozné to je, ale žádná záhada.“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*an unhappy silence*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*an*) + premodification (*unhappy*) + head (*silence*))

92. A blacksmith, one of the main protagonists in the detective story (*The Hammer of God*), answers Inspector's accusation of having murdered the colonel (see example 90). The blacksmith is the prime suspect for two reasons. First, the victim of the murder was the blacksmith's wife's lover and second, the crime was performed with unconceivable power which could be ascribed only to the blacksmith, the strongest man in the community. *"There are two men standing outside this shop," went on the blacksmith with ponderous lucidity, "good tradesmen in Greenford whom you all know, who will swear that they saw me from before midnight till daybreak and long after in the committee-room of our Revival Mission, which sits all night, we save souls so fast. [...]"* (p. 187)

Translation:

„Tady před kovárnou stojí dva muži,“ pokračoval kovář zřetelně a důrazně, „počestní obchodníci z Greenfordu, které všichni znáte. Oni odpřísáhnou, že mě viděli od půlnoci do rána a ještě dlouho potom v zasedací síni naší misie, která pracuje celou noc, tolik nám záleží na spáse duší.“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: bare existential with appositional notional subject

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*two men standing outside this shop, good tradesmen in Greenford whom you all know, who will swear that they saw me from before midnight till daybreak and long after in the committee-room of our Revival Mission, which sits all night*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (numeration (*two*) + head (*men*) + postmodification (*standing outside this shop*) + complex apposition (*good tradesmen in.....*))

93. At the scene of crime, the blacksmith (example 92) gives his view on how the victim of the crime was killed. It makes for a puzzling issue as the victim was smitten on his head with extreme force, force which a human is hardly capable of.

“[...] *I believe that One who walks invisible in every house defended the honour of mine, and laid the defiler dead before the door of it. I believe the force in that blow was just the force there is in earthquakes, and no force less.*” (p. 191)

Translation:

„Věřím, že ten, který neviděn kráčí příbytkem každého, chránil čest mého domu a srazil vetřelce před prahem. Myslím, že to byla stejná síla, jaká je v zemětřesení, a ne menší.“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial, extended presentation scale FSP pattern:

Theme proper (omitted relative *that*) – **rest of the theme** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*in earthquakes*)

Commentary:

The existential construction is embedded in a relative adjectival clause modifying the notion of ‘*the force*’, cf. *I believe the force in that blow was just the force that there is in earthquakes.* The notional subject of the construction is constituted by an omitted relative *that*. The relative pronoun repeats the notion expressed by the antecedent (*the force*) and as such (an element that merely repeats a piece of information and does not bring anything new) it serves as the theme proper.

The relative adjectival clause is perspectived towards the final prepositional phrase which is the bearer of context-independent information and which constitutes the rheme of the distributional field.

notional subject (context) – context-dependent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (omitted relative pronoun (*that*))

final adverbial – context-independent, **specification**

94. *Bohun followed him [Father Brown], and came out on a kind of stone gallery or balcony outside the building, from which one could see the illimitable plain in which their small hill stood, wooded away to the purple horizon and dotted with villages and farms.* (p. 193)

[...intervention by direct speech followed by a long descriptive paragraph]

“*I think there is something rather dangerous standing on these high places even to pray,*” said Father Brown. *Heights were made to be looked at, not to be looked from.*” (p. 194)

Translation:

„Myslím, že stát na těch výšinách je dost nebezpečné, i kdyby se člověk jen modlil,“ řekl otec Brown. (JČ)

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*something rather dangerous standing on these high places even to pray*)

┌───┐
rheme proper

Commentary:

The head of the noun phrase constituting the notional subject of the construction is heavily postmodified and this complex postmodification together with its head constitutes the rheme of the existential construction. Within the rheme there is a distributional subfield with its own rheme constituted by the infinitive of purpose (*to pray*) whose rhematic character is signalled by the focalizer (*even*).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + complex postmodification (*rather dangerous standing on these high places even to pray*))

95. *She had eyes of startling brilliancy, but it was the brilliancy of steel rather than of diamonds; and her straight, slim figure was a shade too stiff for its grace. Her younger sister was like her shortened shadow, a little greyer, paler, and more insignificant. They both wore a business-like black, with little masculine cuffs and collars. There are thousands of such curt, strenuous ladies in the offices of London, but the interest of these lay rather in their real than their apparent position.* (pp. 199 – 200)

Translation:

V londýnských úřadech jsou tisíce takových upjatých snaživých dam, tyto dívky však nebyly zajímavé ani tak zjevem jako společenským postavením. (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*thousands of such curt, strenuous ladies*) – **diatheme** (*in the offices of London*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (a numerative as the head (*thousands*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*of such curt, strenuous ladies*))

final adverbial – context-independent (the definite article cataphoric), diatheme, semantically scene/setting

96. *The building was American in its sky-scraping altitude, and American also in the oiled elaboration of its machinery of telephones and lifts. But it was barely finished and still understaffed; only three tenants had moved in; the office just above Flambeau was occupied, as also was the office just below him; the two floors above that and the three below were entirely bare.* (p. 198)

Was it a suicide? With so insolent an optimist it seemed impossible. Was it murder? But who was there in those hardly inhabited flats to murder anybody? (p. 205)

Translation:

Ale kde by se mohl vzít vrah v domě, který byl téměř neobydlený? (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*But*) – **rheme** (*who*) – **transition** (*was*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **diatheme** (*in those hardly inhabited flats*) – **rest of the rheme** (*to murder anybody*)

Commentary:

We need to comment on the adverbial of place ‘*in those hardly inhabited flats*’. In the frame of the immediately relevant context, the adverbial presents an irretrievable item of information. The reader is directed 7 pages back, where the bareness of the block of offices – the scene of the murder – was introduced into the narration (see the passage above). Our example presents the second mention of the place. The semantic factor indicates low degree of communicative dynamism and hence the dynamic semantic role of the scene.

The infinitive of purpose (*to murder anybody*) operates as a postmodifying element and together with its head (*who*) constitutes one communicative unit, the rheme of the whole.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (interrogative pronoun *who* + discontinuous postmodification by means of infinitive (*to murder anybody*))

final adverbial – context-dependent (but not retrievable from the immediately relevant context)

97. “[...] *She and I have walked another world from yours, and trod palaces of crystal while you were plodding through tunnels and corridors of brick. Well, I know that policemen, theological and otherwise, always fancy that where there has been love there must soon be hatred; so there you have the first point to be made for the prosecution. [...]*” (pp. 207 – 208)

Translation:

„Vím, že policie, teologická i jiná, si myslí, že tam kde je láska, musí být i nenávisť. A to je první opěrný bod pro vaši obžalobu.“ (JČ)

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*where there has been love*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*must*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*soon*) – **transition** (*be*) – **rheme** (*hatred*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (noun *hatred*)

initial adverbial (context) – context-dependent, scene/setting

initial adverbial (form) – existential construction

Existential construction (*Where there has been love*)

Type of existential construction: bare existential

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*Where*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*has been*) – **rheme** (*love*)

Commentary:

The position of adverbial (*Where*) is purely grammatical and it has no connection with FSP. The initial position is the only possible as the adverb opens an adverbial clause of place and thus its position is fixed.

Note: Only the main clause entered our statistical data

98. *There was a pause, and the priest went on in a gentle and even broken voice. “Whether or not that devil deliberately made her blind, (99.) there is no doubt that he deliberately killed her through her blindness. [...]*” (p. 213)

Translation:

Nastala pauza a pak kněz pokračoval tichým, téměř zlomeným hlasem. „Ať už ji ten ničema oslepil úmyslně nebo ne, jisté je, že využil její slepoty k vraždě.“ (JČ)

Note: I have noticed that particularly popular is the following existential construction: *There was a silence/pause*, standing on its own to achieve a dramatic effect.

98.

Type of existential construction: bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a pause*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*pause*))

99.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*doubt that he deliberately killed her through her blindness*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (comprising context-dependent elements *he, her, her blindness*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*doubt*) + postmodification by means of a content nominal clause (*that he deliberately killed her through her blindness*))

100. *So faint was that frigid starlight that nothing could have been traced about them except that while they both wore black, one man was enormously big, and the other (perhaps by contrast) almost startingly small. They went up to the great graven tomb of the historic warrior, and stood for a few minutes staring at it. There was no human, perhaps no living, thing for a wide circle; and a morbid fancy might well have wondered if they were human themselves.* (p. 218)

Translation:

Široko daleko nebylo človíčka a snad ani jediného živého tvora. (JZN)

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*human*) – **transition**

proper oriented element (*perhaps*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 2** (*living thing*) – **diatheme** (*for a wide circle*)

Commentary:

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – compound NP (multiple NS (*no human* and *no living thing*))

final adverbial – context-independent, diatheme, semantically local setting of the scene

Source: John Fowles. *The French Lieutenant's Woman*. London: Triad/Panther Books. 1985.

Czech Translation: Helena Žantovská. *Francouzova milenka*. Praha: Mladá fronta, 1976.

101. *The local spy – and there was one – might thus have deduced that these two were strangers, people of some taste, and not to be denied their enjoyment of the Cobb by a mere harsh wind.* (p. 8)

There came a stronger gust of wind, one that obliged Charles to put his arm round Ernestina's waist to support her, and obliged the woman to cling more firmly to the bollard. (p. 13)

Translation:

Silnější poryv větru donutil Charlese položit ruku kolem Ernestinina pasu a podpírat ji a žena se musela pevněji přitisknout k hlavni.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*came*) – **rheme** (*a stronger gust of wind*)

Commentary:

The subject is heterogeneous – the comparative indicates an antecedent (viz. the first mention of the wind five pages earlier). However, it is the adjective that introduces something new to the narration.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + comparative form of adjective (*stronger*) + head (*gust*) + postmodification (*of wind*))

102. *At Cambridge, having duly crammed his classics and subscribed to the Thirty-nine Articles, he had (unlike most young men of his time) actually begun to learn something. But in his second year there he had drifted into a bad set and ended up, one foggy night in London, in carnal possession of a naked girl. He rushed from her plump Cockney arms into those of the Church; horrifying his father one day shortly afterwards by announcing that he wished to take his Holy Orders. There was only one answer to a crisis of this magnitude: the wicked youth was dispatched to Paris.* (pp. 17 – 18)

Translation:

Na krizi takové velikosti existovala jediná odpověď – zvrácený mladík byl odeslán do Paříže.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one answer to a crisis of this magnitude*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (with context-dependent components (*this magnitude*))

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*one*) + head (*answer*) + successive postmodification (*to a crisis of this magnitude*))

103. The author is depicting Mrs. Poultney, one of the not very favourable characters of the book. The description began at page 21 and it continuous half page down 23.

There would have been a place in the Gestapo for the lady; she had a way of interrogation that could reduce the sturdiest girls into tears in the first five minutes. (p. 23)

Translation:

Zmíněná dáma by se docela dobře uplatnila ve službách gestapa; uměla vyslychat tak, že dokázala i nejtvrdohlavější děvče rozplakat během prvních pěti minut.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*would have been*) – **rheme** (*a place in the Gestapo for the lady*)

Commentary:

Within the rheme the final prepositional phrase (a component in the multiple postmodification of the notional subject) carries the lowest degree of CD. We need to comment on the prepositional phrase *in the Gestapo*. Despite its strong indication of localisation we interpret it as a postmodifying element as it particularizes the head noun ‘place’ and rather than a location, a type of place (characteristic of its harsh methods of interrogation) is concerned.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (it includes a context-dependent component (*for the lady*))

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*place*) + multiple postmodification (*in the Gestapo for the lady*))

104. *So Sarah came for the interview, accompanied by the vicar. She secretly pleased Mrs Poulteney from the start, by seeming so cast down, so annihilated by circumstance. It was true that she looked suspiciously what she indeed was – nearer twenty-five than ‘thirty or perhaps more’. But there was her only too visible sorrow, which showed she was a sinner, and Mrs Poulteney wanted nothing to do with anyone who did not look very clearly to be in that category.* (p. 36)

Translation:

Ale její zármutek byl naprosto očividný, což dokazovalo, že jde o hříšnici, a paní Poulteneyová nechtěla mít pranic společného s někým, kdo by nepatřil do této kategorie.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with both pre- and postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*But*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*her only too visible sorrow, which showed she was a sinner*)

Commentary:

Only in our example operates as an adjective (not adverb constituting a focalizer) with an intensifying effect.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-dependent element *her*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*her*) + premodification (*only too visible*) + head (*sorrow*) + postmodification by means of non-restrictive relative clause (*which showed she was a sinner*))

105. *He would have made you smile for he was carefully equipped for his role. He wore stout nailed boots and canvas gaiters that rose to encase Norfolk breeches of heavy flannel. There was a tight and absurdly long coat to match; a canvas wideawake hat of an indeterminate beige; a massive ashplant, which he had bought on his way to the Cobb; and a voluminous rucksack, from which you might have shaken out an already heavy array of hammers, wrappings, notebooks, pillboxes, adzes, and heaven knows what else.* (p. 45)

Translation:

Oblek doplňoval těsný a nesmyslně dlouhý kabát, plátěný klobouk se zdviženou krempou neurčité béžové barvy, masivní hůl z jasanového dřeva, kterou si koupil cestou na molo, a objemný batoh, z něhož byste vytřásli pořádně těžký náklad kladívek, obalů, notesů, různých škatulek, sekyrek a bůhvíčeho ještě.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with multiple NS (each component of which is modified)

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a tight and absurdly long coat to match; a canvas wideawake hat of an indeterminate beige; a massive ashplant, which he had bought on his way to the Cobb; and a voluminous rucksack, from which you might have shaken out an already heavy array of hammers, wrappings, notebooks, pillboxes, adzes, and heaven knows what else*)

Commentary:

The notional subject is constituted by a coordinate noun phrase containing three conjoints (*a coat, a hat, and a rucksack*) each of which is modified. The most extensive modification is that of *a rucksack*. It is postmodified by means of an adjectival relative clause comprising a multiple postmodification of the object (*from which you might have shaken out an already heavy array of hammers, wrappings, notebooks, pillboxes, adzes, and heaven knows what else*).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – compound NP

106. *It was not concern for his only daughter that made him send her to boarding-school, but obsession with his own ancestry. Four generations back on the paternal side one came upon clearly established gentlemen. There was even a remote relationship with the Drake family, an irrelevant fact that had petrified gradually over the years into the assumption of a direct lineal descent from the great Sir Francis.* (p. 51)

Translation:

Existovalo prý jakési vzdálené příbuzenství s rodinou Drakeů, fakt sám o sobě podružný, který se však za léta vyvinul u tohoto muže v přesvědčení, že mezi ním a velkým sirem Francisem je přímá rodová posloupnost.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with both pre- and postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*even*) – **rheme** (*a remote relationship with the Drake family*)

Commentary:

Final prepositional phrase operates as a postmodifying element.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*remote*) + head (*relationship*) + postmodification (*with the Drake family*))

107. A new chapter is opened with the following existential construction.

There runs, between Lyme Regis and Axmouth six miles to the west, one of the strangest coastal landscapes in Southern England. (p. 61)

Translation:

Mezi Lyme a Axmouthem táhne se šest mil na západ jedna z nejpodivnějších přímořských krajín jižní Anglie.

Type of existential construction: existential with medial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*runs*) – **diatheme** (*between Lyme Regis and Axmouth six miles to the west*) – **rheme** (*one of the strangest coastal landscapes in Southern England*)

Commentary:

The medial position of the adverbial is due to the principles of end-weight and end-focus. Thematic nature of the adverbial is due to the fact that the plot of the novel is set in Lyme Regis.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*one*) + successive postmodification (*of the strangest coastal landscapes in Southern England*))

medial adverbial – heterogeneous (Lyme Regis is a context-dependent element), diatheme

108. *Charles's solicitous inquiries – should the doctor not be called? – being politely answered in negative, he took his leave. And having commanded Sam to buy what flowers he could and to take them to the charming invalid's house, [...]* (p. 43)

It had been a very did-not sort of day for the poor girl, who had had only Aunt Tranter to show her displeasure to. There had been Charles's daffodils and jonquils, whose perfume she now inhaled, but even they had vexed her at first. (p. 67)

Translation:

Měla sice Charlesovy žluté a bílé narcisy, jejichž vůni teď vdechovala, ale i ty ji zpočátku dráždily.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with compound NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme** (*Charles's daffodils and jonquils, whose perfume she now inhaled*)

Commentary:

The notional subject, although hinted at earlier in the text (see the extract above), is context-independent as the notion of flowers is brought back on the scene after a large diversion from the topic (twenty-four pages between the two mentions!) and as it is put into a new relation (*Charles's daffodils and jonquils*). Last, but not least, the reader learns about the kind of flowers that were brought to Ernestina (Charles's fiancée) for the first time, i.e. *daffodils and jonquils*.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-dependent + context independent elements)

notional subject (form) – compound NP (determiner (*Charles's*) + head (*daffodils and jonquils*) + clausal postmodification (*whose perfume she now inhaled*))

109. *He walked for a mile or more, until he came simultaneously to a break in the trees and the first outpost of civilization. This was a long thatched cottage, which stood slightly below his path. There were two or three meadows round it, running down the cliffs; and just as Charles came out of the woodlands he saw a man hoying a herd of cows away from a low byre beside the cottage.* (p. 76)

Translation:

Obklopovaly je [venkovské stavení] tři luční svahy končící až dole na útesech.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*two or three meadows*) – **diatheme** (*round it*) – **rest of the rheme** (*running down the cliffs*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*two or three*) + head (*meadows*) + discontinuous postmodification (*running down the cliffs*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, diatheme

110. *It came to law, and then to a compromise: a right of way was granted [concerning the area where Ware Commons – an important place in the novel – was situated], and the rare trees stayed unmolested. But the commonage was done for.*

Yet there had remained locally a feeling that Ware Commons was public property.

Poachers slinked in less guiltily than elsewhere after the pheasants and rabbits, [...] (p. 80)

Translation:

Přesto však v městečku nikdy nezanikl pocit, že Wareská občina patří všem.

Type of existential construction: existential with medial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*Yet*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had remained*) – **diatheme** (*locally*) – **rheme** (*a feeling that Ware Commons was public property*)

Commentary:

An interesting element from the point of FSP is here the medially placed adverbial *locally*.

Despite its context-independence it constitutes the setting of the construction. It is due to the presence of more successful competitors for the role of the rheme which is the context-independent subject and its clausal postmodification. As well as in the example 107 we encounter a construction where the FSP principle overrides grammatical ordering.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-independent head, context-dependent *Ware Commons*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*feeling*) + clausal (appositional) postmodification by means of content nominal clause (*that Ware Commons was public property*))

medial adverbial – context-independent, diatheme

111. *In other words, to be free myself, I must give him, and Tina, and Sarah, even abominable Mrs Poulteney, their freedoms as well. There is only one good definition of God: the freedom that allows other freedoms to exist. And I must conform to that definition. (p. 86)*

Translation:

Existuje jenom jedna dobrá definice Boha; je to svoboda, která dovoluje jiným svobodám existovat. A této definici se musím podřídít.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one good definition of God: the freedom that allows other freedoms to exist*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*one*) + premodification (*good*) + head (*definition*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*of God*) + appositional postmodification (*the freedom that allows other freedoms to exist*))

112. “*But surely... we are not going to forbid them [two servants, a young man and a young woman are concerned] to speak together if they meet?*”

“*There is a world of difference between what may be accepted in London and what is proper here. I think you should speak to Sam. The girl is too easily led.*” (p. 93)

Translation:

„Je ohromný rozdíl, co se dá trpět v Londýně a co je vhodné tady. Myslím, že byste měl se Samem promluvit. Děvče se dá až příliš snadno vodit za nos.“

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*a world of difference between what may be accepted in London and what is proper here*)

Commentary:

We need to comment on the final prepositional phrase (*between what may be accepted in London and what is proper here*). It enters our analysis as postmodification, the reasons being mainly semantic. In the frame of syntax we need to consider the possibility of the transposition of the phrase to the beginning of the sentence, cf. *Between what may be accepted in London and what is proper here there is a world of difference*. The sentence seems to be plausible, yet there seems to be some restraint on the interpretation of the phrase as an adverbial. So far we have encountered several examples where the test of transposition failed, viz. where the final prepositional phrase was transferable to the beginning of the clause and still there were strong reasons to analyse it as a postmodifying element, c.f. example 28. *But don't you think there is something special about him?* Here the prepositional phrase *about him* as if specifies and completes the meaning of the preceding phrase *something special*. The same applies to the prepositional phrase under examination. Syntactically it behaves as an adverbial, but semantically it is closely tied with its preceding element inasmuch as it completes and specifies its meaning (the *difference* is explained).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*world*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*of difference*) + further postmodification by a complex prepositional phrase (*between what may be accepted in London and what is proper here*))

113. A new chapter opens with the following lines:

Five uneventful days passed after the last I have described. For Charles, no opportunities to continue his exploration of the Undercliff presented themselves. On one day there was a long excursion to Sidmouth; the mornings of the others were taken up by visits or other more agreeable diversions, such as archery, [...]. (p.99)

Translation:

Jeden den podnikli dlouhý výlet do Sidmouthu.

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*On one day*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a long excursion to Sidmouth*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*long*) + head (*excursion*) + postmodification (*to Sidmouth*))

initial adverbial – adverbial of time, scene/setting

! to Sidmouth is not unequivocally postmodification, can be classified as an indeterminate element

114. *She stared at the turf, as if she would answer no more questions; begged him to go. But there was something in that face, which Charles examined closely in profile, that made him determine not to go.* (p. 105)

Translation:

Zadávala se na trávu, jako by už nechtěla odpovídat na jeho otázky, jako by ho prosila, aby se vzdálil. Ale cosi v tom obličejí, který si Charles upřeně z profilu prohlížel, ho přinutilo neudělat to.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*But*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something*) – **diatheme** (*in that face*) – **rest of the rheme** (*which Charles examined closely in profile, that made him determine not to go*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + multiple discontinuous postmodification (*which Charles examined closely in profile, that made him determine not to go*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, diatheme

115. *He had – or so he believed – fully intended, when he called to escort the ladies down Broad Street to the Assembly Rooms, to tell them of his meeting – though of course on the strict understanding that they must speak to no one about Sarah's wanderings over Ware Commons. But somehow the moment had not seemed opportune. There was first of all a very material dispute to arbitrate upon – Ernestina's folly in wearing grenadine when it was still merino weather, since 'Thou shalt not wear grenadine till May' was one of the nine hundred and ninety-nine commandments her parents had tacked on to the statutory ten.* (p. 113)

Translation:

Zprv se musel vyjádřit k velmi konkrétní rozepři, týkajícího se Ernestinina bláhového rozmaru, že si oblékne hedvábné šaty, když počasí ještě přikazovalo chodit ve vlně.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*first of all*) – **rheme** (*a very material dispute to arbitrate upon*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*very material*) + postmodification by infinitive (*to arbitrate upon*))

116. *Which brings me to this evening of the concert nearly a week later, and why Sam came to such differing conclusions about the female sex from his master's; for he was in that kitchen again. Unfortunately there was now a duenna present – Mrs Tranter's cook. But the duenna was fast asleep in her Windsor chair in front of the opened fire of her range.* (p. 118)

Translation:

Na smůlu tam tentokrát byla garde – kuchařka paní Trantové.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*Unfortunately*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **diatheme** (*now*) – **rheme** (*a duenna present – Mrs Tranter's cook*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (*Mrs Tranter* is a context-dependent element)

notional subject (form) – compound NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*duenna*) + postmodification by an adjective in postposition (*present*) + apposition (*Mrs Tranter's cook*))

initial adverbial – sentence adverbial, TrPrO

medial adverbial – context-dependent, setting (*now* = a week later)

117. An opening of a new paragraph after a block of direct speech (consisting of 6 lines).

There was a longer silence. (p. 123)

Translation:

Nastalo delší ticho.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a longer silence*)

Commentary:

The premodifying adjective is in its comparative form therefore it invariably implies context-dependence. We find a mention of silence on the preceding page (*There was a silence*, p. 122) to which the sentence under examination (example 117) is related. Even though the stretch of text between the two sentences is very large with a lot of action (there are blocks of direct speech), the notion of silence is contrasted with the previous mention by being specified as *longer* silence. The notional subject, thus, enters our analysis as heterogeneous (including both context independent (*longer*) and context dependent elements (*silence*)).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification by a comparative adjective (*longer*) + head (*silence*))

118. *Dr. Grogan was, in fact, as confirmed an old bachelor as aunt Tranter a spinster. Being Irish, he had to the full that strangely eunuchistic Hibernian ability to flirt and flirt and flatter womankind without ever allowing his heart to become entangled. A dry little kestrel of a man, sharp almost fierce on occasion, yet easy to unbend when the company was to his taste, he added a pleasant astringency to Lyme society; for when he was with you you felt he was always hovering a little, waiting to pounce on any foolishness – and yet if he liked you, it was always with a tonic wit and the humanity of a man who had lived and learnt, after his fashion, to let live. There was, too, something faintly dark about him, for he had been born a Catholic: he was in terms of our own time, not unlike someone who had been a Communist in the 1930s – accepted now, but still with the devil's singe on him.* (pp. 129 – 130)

Translation:

Bylo v něm také něco mírně podezřelého, protože se narodil jako katolík.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with medial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*too*) – **rheme** (*something faintly dark about him*)

Commentary:

The final prepositional phrase *about him* needs to be commented upon. As a semantic complement of the preceding adjective (*dark*) helping the reader resolve in what respect the quality of dark is to be understood we analyse it as a part of the complex postmodification of the indefinite pronoun *something*.

The adverbial *too* functions as a linking element on the sentential level (in the meaning of *moreover*, cf. *Moreover, there was something faintly dark about him*).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (comprises context-dependent elements)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + postmodification (*faintly dark about him*))

medial adverbial – sentence adverbial, TrPrO

119. *Dr. Grogan reached out and poked his fire. “We know more about the fossils out there on the beach than we do about what take place in that girl’s mind. There is a clever German doctor who has recently divided melancholia into several types. [...]”* (p. 134)

Translation:

Jeden chytrý německý doktor rozdělil nedávno melancholii na různé typy.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*a clever German doctor who has recently divided melancholia into several types*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*clever German*) + head (*doctor*) + postmodification by a relative adjectival clause (*who has recently divided melancholia into several types*))

120. *This tender relationship was almost mute. They rarely if ever talked, and if they did, of only the most trivial domestic things. They knew it was that warm, silent co-presence in the darkness that mattered. There must have been something sexual in their feelings? Perhaps; but they never went beyond the bounds that two sisters would.* (p. 139)

Translation:

Tato věta je v překladu Hany Žantovské vynechána.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*must have been*) – **rheme** (*something sexual in their feelings*)?

Commentary:

We consider the final prepositional phrase (*in their feelings*) as a postmodifying element, which complements the preceding adjective *sexual* (in which respect?).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (includes a context-dependent element: *their feelings*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + postmodification by adjective (*sexual*))

121. *This indeed was his plan: to be sympathetic to Sarah, but to establish a distance, to remind her of their difference of station... though lightly, of course, with an unpretentious irony.*

“They are all I have to give.”

“There is no reason why you should give me anything.”

“You have come.” (p. 144)

Translation:

„Nemáte nejmenší důvod mi něco dávat.“

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*reason why you should give me anything*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-dependent elements: *you, me*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*reason*) + postmodification by content nominal interrogative clause (*why you should give me anything*))

122. *“Varguennes recovered. It came to within a week of the time when he should take his leave. By then he had declared his attachment to me.”*

“He asked you to marry him?”

“There was talk of marriage. He told me he was to be promoted to captain of a wine ship when he returned to France. [...]” (p. 149)

Translation:

„Mluvílo se o sňatku. Řekl mi, že až se vrátí do Francie, bude jmenován kapitánem na obchodní lodi.“

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*was*) – **rheme** (*talk of marriage*)

notional subject (context) – context-dependent (*He asked you to marry him? There was talk of marriage*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*talk*) + postmodification by means of prepositional phrase (*of marriage*))

The rheme proper is constituted by the verb. The polarity of the verb carries the communication a step further than the notional subject does and the fact would with all probability be reflected in the spoken form, cf. There WAS talk of marriage.

Commentary on translation:

Due to the fact that the polarity of predication is emphasised a translation truer to the FSP structure of the original sentence would be as follows: *O sňatku se mluvílo.*

123. Opening of a new paragraph:

And then too there was that strangely Egyptian quality among the Victorians; that claustrophobia we see so clearly evidenced in their enveloping, mummifying clothes, their narrow-windowed and -corridorred architecture, their fear of the open and of the naked. Hide reality, shut out nature. (p. 154)

Translation:

A potom – viktoriáni měli v sobě něco, čím se podivně podobali starým Egyptánům. Klaustrofobii, která se tak jasně značí v jejich prostředí, ty šaty dělající z lidí mumie, úzká okna a síně, jejich strach z nahoty a otevřené přírody.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented elements (*And then too*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*that strangely Egyptian quality;*) – **diatheme** (*among the Victorians*) – **rest of rheme** (*that claustrophobia we see so clearly evidenced in their enveloping, mummifying clothes, their narrow-windowed and -corridored architecture, their fear of the open and of the naked*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (*that strangely Egyptian quality* + appositive *that claustrophobia [...]*)

initial adverbials – sentence adverbials, TrPrO

final adverbial – context-dependent, diatheme

124. *What you question now is the justice of existence.*”

“And that is forbidden?”

“Not forbidden. But fruitless.”

She shook her head. “There are fruit. Though bitter.” (p. 159)

Translation:

„Nese to plody. I když hořké.“

Type of existential construction: bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*are*) – **rheme** (*fruit*)

Commentary:

Though bitter constitutes an independent element, which is not a part of the distributional field of the existential construction. Surely, the intonation would reveal an independent tone unit as well. The sentence under discussion would in Nekvapil’s view be considered a compounded formation, where the first (sentential) part stands as a base component and the second part as a bound component comprising a syntactically non-obligatory element. The whole would be then considered as two “intonationally and/or graphically complete sequences of word-forms” (189); two utterances. He also considers the processes by which a compounded formation comes to existence. He believes there are two such processes: the process of supplementation and the process of **parcellation**. For the purpose of the present study, the process of parcellation is relevant; the process of supplementation is a “spontaneous and automatic language activity” and it is applied “*primarily in the production of spoken texts*” (205) while “*the process of parcellation is a premeditated and deliberately performed operation resorted to especially in the production of written texts*” (205). It is believed that “*the use of compounded formations in what is described as narrator’s speech is primarily designed to emphasize individual semantic elements [...] and hence give the narrative flow a certain dynamic quality*” (pp.215 – 216).

notional subject (context) – context-dependent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (head (*fruit*))

125. Opening of a new paragraph, to be more precise, of a new section where the story follows the author's own contemplations:

There was still deception in the flesh, or Ernestina, to be faced. But Charles, when he arrived at his hotel, found that family had come to his aid. (p. 165)

Translation:

Přesto se musel postavit tváří v tvář zosobněné nutnosti podvodu, totiž Ernestině. Ale po svém návratu do hotelu zjistil, že mu přispěla na pomoc rodina.

Type of existential construction: existential with medial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*still*) – **rheme** (*deception in the flesh, or Ernestina, to be faced*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*deception*) + multiple postmodification by means of prepositional phrase (*in the flesh*) and infinitive (*to be faced*))

medial adverbial – context-independent, diatheme, semantically setting

126. *But that room was empty, too. And something was strange in it, puzzling Charles a moment. Then he smiled. There were new curtains – and the carpets, yes, they were new as well.* (p. 171 – 172)

Translation:

Byly tu nové záclony a také koberce – i koberce byly nové.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with compound NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*new curtains – and the carpets*)

rheme 1

rheme 2

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – compound NP

127. *A few minutes later he was striding down the hill to the White Lion. The air was mild, but the sky was overcast. Idle fingers of wet air brushed his cheeks. There was thunder in the offing, as in his heart.* (p. 177)

Translation:

Vzduch byl teplý, ale nebe zatažené. Jemné prsty vlhkého vzduchu mu hladily tváře. Od moře duněla bouřka, stejně jako v jeho srdci.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials, extended presentation scale

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme 1** (*thunder*) – **diatheme** (*in the offing*) – **rheme 2 (specification)** (*as in his heart*)

Commentary:

The comparative clause (*as in his heart*) contains an ellipsis of the predication (*as there was thunder in his heart*) and thus the only element that moves the communication further is the adverbial which is the element with the highest CD. The semantic dynamic function of the adverbial is that of specification.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – simple NP (*thunder*)

adverbial in the penultimate position: context-independent, setting

final adverbial – context-independent, specification (comparative adverbial towards which the sentence is perspectived)

128. *And Charles stared at a miniature, framed in gold and his uncle's heavy fingers, of Mrs Bella Tomkins. She looked disagreeably young; firm-lipped; and with assertive eyes – not at all unattractive, even to Charles. There was, curiously, some faint resemblance to Sarah in the face; and a subtle new dimension was added to Charles's sense of humiliation and dispossession.* (p. 187)

Translation:

Podivnou náhodou se ten obličej vzdáleně podobal Sarah. A Charlesův pocit pokoření a vydědění se prohloubil nenápadně o další rozměr.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*curiously*) – **rheme** (*some faint resemblance to Sarah*) – **diatheme** (*in the face*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (*Sarah* is a context-dependent element)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*some*) + premodification (*faint*) + head (resemblance) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*to Sarah*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, diatheme, setting

129. *He felt fatally disabused of his own intelligence. It had let him down in his choice of a life-partner; for like so many Victorian, and perhaps more recent, men Charles was to live all his life under the influence of the ideal. There are some men who are consoled by the idea that*

130. there are women less attractive than their wives; and others who are haunted by the knowledge that 131. there are more attractive. Charles now saw only too well which category he belonged to. (pp. 195 – 196)

Translation:

Jsou muži, kteří se utěší myšlenkou, že existují ženy méně přitažlivé než jejich manželka; a jsou jiní, které pronásleduje pomýšlení, že existují i přitažlivější. Charles náhle chápal až příliš dobře, ke které kategorii náleží.

129.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*some men who are consoled by the idea that there are women less attractive than their wives*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*some*) + head (*men*) + postmodification by relative adjectival clause (*who are consoled by the idea that there are women less attractive than their wives*))

130.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*women less attractive than their wives*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*women*) + postmodification by a comparative adjective in postposition (*less attractive*) and complemented by the standard of comparison (*than their wives*))

131.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with ellipited NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*more attractive [women]*)

notional subject (context) – context-dependent (a highly activated element which is ellipited in the text)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (comparative adjective (*more attractive*) + ellipited head [women])

132. *Then the Morell mansion was surrounded by sentries on the night of the attempted rape; not one had noticed anything untoward, even though the bedroom concerned was on the top floor and reachable only by a ladder it would have required at least three men to carry and 'mount' – therefore a ladder that would have left traces in the soft soil beneath the window... and the defence established that there had been none. (p. 200)*

Translation:

V den údajného pokusu o znásilnění bylo Morellovo sídlo obklopeno strážemi. Nikdo nezpozoroval nic mimořádného, ačkoliv příslušná ložnice se nalézala v nejvyšším patře a k oknu se dalo vylézt jedině pomocí dlouhého žebříku – bylo zapotřebí nejméně tří lidí, aby žebřík přinesli, drželi a po něm vystoupili – a žebřík by byl nutně musel zanechat stopy v půdě pod oknem; obhajoba dokázala, že tam žádné nebyly.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme** (*none*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (the negative charge of the proform being irretrievable from the preceding context makes it a rheme)

notional subject (form) – simple NP (proform *none* = “no traces”)

133. *On the slopes above his path the trunks of the ashes and sycamores, a honey gold in the oblique sunlight, erected their dewy green vaults of young leaves; there was something mysteriously religious about them, but of a religion before religion; a druid balm, a green sweetness over all... and such infinity of greens, some almost black in the further recesses of the foliage; from the most emerald to the palest pomona. (pp. 207 – 208)*

Translation:

Na svazích nad stezkou zvedaly šťavnatě zelené koruny s mladými listy vysoké kmeny javorů a jasanů oblité medově zlatým slunečním světlem. Bylo něco tajemně náboženského v tom všem, ale bylo to náboženství před náboženstvím.

Type of existential construction: bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something mysteriously religious about them*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + postmodification by modified adjective (*mysteriously religious*) which is complemented by prepositional phrase (*about them*))

134. *In that stillness her light, even breathing was both visible and audible; and for a moment that she should be sleeping there so peacefully seemed as wicked a crime as any Charles had expected.*

Yet there rose in him, and inextinguishably, a desire to protect. (p. 214)

Translation:

A přece se v něm nepotlačitelně ozvala touha ochraňovat.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*rose*) – **diatheme** (*in him*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*and inextinguishably*) – **rheme** (*a desire to protect*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) – head (*desire*) + postmodification by infinitive (*to protect*))

medial adverbial 1 – context-dependent, diatheme, semantically setting (*in him*)

medial adverbial 2 – context-independent, transition proper oriented element (*inextinguishably*)

135. “*And I must tell you something else. There is talk in the town of committing you to an institution.*” (p. 223)

Translation:

„Musím vám říci ještě něco. Ve městě se povídá, že máte být zavřena do ústavu.“

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*talk of committing you to an institution*) – **diatheme** (*in the town*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-dependent element: *you*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*talk*) + discontinuous postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*of committing you to an institution*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, diatheme, semantically setting

136. *Her head turned against his shoulder, she nestled against him; and as he patted and stroked and murmured a few foolish words, he found himself most suddenly embarrassed.*

There was a distinct stir in his loins. (p. 229)

Translation:

V jeho slabínách se cosi zřetelně pohnulo.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial, extended presentation scale

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a distinct stir*) – **specification** (*in his loins*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*distinct*) + head (*stir*))

final adverbial – heterogeneous (context-dependent element *his*, context-independent *loins*), specification

137. *It would be an exaggeration to say that the city had a red light quarter in 1867; for all that it had a distinctly louche area, rather away from the centre of the town and the carbolic presence of the Cathedral. It occupied a part of the city that slopes down towards the river, once, in the days (already well passed in 1867) when it was a considerable port, the heart of Exeter life. It consisted of a warren of streets still with many Tudor houses, badly lit, malodorous, teeming. There were brothels there, and dance-halls and gin-palaces; but rather more frequent were variously undone girls and women – unmarried mothers, mistresses, a whole population in retreat from the claustrophobic villages and small towns of Devon. (p. 238)*

Translation:

Byly tu nevěstince, tančírny a kořalny; ještě četnější tu však byly osudem stíhané dívky a ženy – svobodné matky, milenky, celé zástupy nešťastnic, jež se sem uchýlily před nepřátelskými vesnicemi a městečky z celého Devonu.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme 1** (*brothels*) – **diatheme** (*there*) – **rheme 2** (*dance-halls*) – **rheme 3** (*gin-palaces*)

Commentary:

Interestingly, the multiple notional subject does not make an impact, uninterrupted whole but there is the adverbial proform *there* inserted between the second and third constituent. We deal here with a discontinuous coordinated structure.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – compound NP (three elements coordinated by *and* (*brothels and dance-halls and gin-palaces*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, diatheme, setting

138. Opening of a new chapter:

When Charles at last found himself on the broad steps of the Freeman town mansion, it was already dusk, gaslamped and crisp. There was a faint mist, compounding the scent of the spring verdure from the Park across the street and the old familiar soot. (p. 252)

Translation:

Když se Charles konečně octl na schodišti před Freemanovým městským sídlem, snesl se už chladný soumrak prosvětlený jen plynovými lampami. Ve vzduchu se vznášela slabá mlha, v níž se spojovala vůně jarní zeleně z parku naproti přes ulici s dobře povědomým pachem sazí.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a faint mist, compounding the scent of the spring verdure from the Park across the street and the old familiar soot*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (*the ... soot* is dependent on a broader context – it is activated throughout the novel whose plot takes place in a coal-mine area)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*faint*) + head (*mist*) + postmodification by a participle in postposition (*compounding the*)

scent of the spring verdure from the Park across the street and the old familiar soot))

139. *You have just made some decision in which your personal benefit, your chance of possession, has not been allowed to interfere? Then do not dismiss Charles's state of mind as a mere conditioning of futile snobbery. See him for what he is: a man struggling to overcome history. And even though he does not realize it.*

There pressed on Charles more than the common human instinct to preserve personal identity:

140. *there lay behind him all those years of thought, speculation, self-knowledge.* (p. 257)

Translation:

Na Charlese doléhalo mnohem víc než pouhý instinkt zachovat si jednotu osobnosti; ležela za ním všechna ta léta myšlení, úvah, sebeuvědomování.

139.

Type of existential construction: existential with medial O prep

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*pressed*) – **diatheme** (*on Charles*) – **rheme** (*more than the common human instinct to preserve personal identity*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*more*) + complementation of the comparative form (*than the common human instinct to preserve personal identity*))

Commentary1:

The verb is worth an extra comment. Interestingly, the verb of presentation on the scene is a prepositional verb here (*press on*) followed by a prepositional object which together with the preposition often resemble locative elements (cf. *on Charles*).

Commentary2:

Notice the nominal function of *more*.

140.

Type of existential construction: existential with medial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*lay*) – **diatheme** (*behind him*) – **rheme** (*all those years of thought, speculation, self-knowledge*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent (determiner *those* serves as a tool of presenting a context-independent element as familiar)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*all*) + determiner (*those*) + head (*years*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*of thought, speculation, self-knowledge*))

Commentary:

The reader is given a hint that he/she is supposed to take a new piece of information as a familiar one. Here the reader learns about years of thought, speculation... that lie behind Charles for the first time, however as it was mentioned at some point in the novel that Charles is a thinking and doubting being, the reader is as if instructed to take the information about *all those years* as an established fact.

141. *Charles stared at them, then abruptly smiled. "Excellent idea." But then he resumed his rather solemn stare out of the window. He felt he ought to stop the carriage and say good night to them. He remembered, in a brief flash of proportion, what their reputation was. Then there came out of nowhere Sarah's face; that face with its closed eyes tended to his, the kiss... so much fuss about nothing.* (p. 262)

Translation:

Ale odněkud se vynořila Sařina tvář; ta tvář se zavřenýma očima obrácená k němu...ten polibek...tolik trápení pro nic.

Type of existential construction: existential with medial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme (*Then*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*came*) – **diatheme** (*out of nowhere*) – **rheme** (*Sarah's face*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (context-dependent element: *Sarah*)

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*Sarah's*) + head (*face*))

medial adverbial – entirely context-independent, diatheme, semantically setting

initial adverbial – context-independent, adverbial of time, setting

142. *He stole another look at her during the next silence. A horrid mathematics gnawed at Charles's mind: three hundred and sixty-five, say three hundred 'working', multiply by two ... it was six hundred to one that she did not have some disease. Was there some delicate way he could ask? 143. There was not.* (p. 268)

Translation:

Existoval nějaký taktní způsob, jak se zeptat? Nikoli.

142.

Type of existential construction: bare interrogative existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Transition (*Was*) – **theme** (*there*) – **rheme** (*some delicate way he could ask*)?

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*some*) + premodification (*delicate*) + head (*way*) + postmodification by a relative adjectival clause (*he could ask*))

143.

Type of existential construction: bare negative existential with ellipted NS

FSP pattern:

Theme (*There*) – **rheme** (*was not*)

notional subject (context) – entirely context-dependent

notional subject (form) – **ellipted** complex NP (determiner (*some*) + premodification (*delicate*) + head (*way*) + postmodification by a relative adjectival clause (*he could ask*))

144. Opening of a new paragraph:

There are two kinds of hangover: in one you feel ill and incapable, in the other you feel ill and lucid. (p. 276)

Translation:

Jsou dva druhy kocoviny. Při prvním je vám zle a na nic se nepamatujete, při druhém je vám zle a víte všechno.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*two kinds of hangover*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (numeration (*two*) + head (*kinds*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*of hangover*))

145. “*Pure gold, Mr Charles, pure gold – that’s ‘ow I’d treat any words of hadvice from that gentleman’s mouth.*”

With this hyperbole Sam left. Charles stared at the closed door. He began to wonder if there wasn’t something of Uriah Heep beginning to erupt on the surface of Sam’s personality; a certain duplicity. (p. 285)

Translation:

Napadlo ho, jestli se v Samově charakteru nezačíná objevovat nápadná obdoba takového Uriáše Heepa, jistá obojetnost.

Type of existential construction: existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*If*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*wasn’t*) – **rheme** (*something of Uriah Heep beginning to erupt on the surface of Sam’s personality*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*of Uriah Heep*) + participial construction (*beginning to erupt on the surface of Sam’s personality*))

Commentary:

The rheme comprises two FSP subfields where the second one is constituted by the participial construction (*beginning to erupt on the surface of Sam’s personality*). The final adverbial (*on the surface of Sam’s personality*) then is not a constituent of the highest predication, but an element in the postmodification of the notional subject.

146. Opening of a new chapter:

They arrived at the White Lion just before ten that night. The lights were still on in Aunt Tranter’s house; a curtain moved as they passed. Charles performed a quick toilet and leaving Sam to unpack, strode manfully up the hill. Mary was overjoyed to see him; Aunt Tranter just behind her, was pinkly wreathed in welcoming smiles. She had had strict orders to remove herself as soon as she had greeted the traveller: there was to be no duenna nonsense that evening. Ernestina, with her customary estimation of her own dignity, had remained in the back sitting-room. (p. 290)

Translation:

Měla přísný rozkaz vzdálit se hned po uvítání našeho cestovatele. Ten večer se měl obejít bez obvyklých pošetilostí s gardedámou.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was to be*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*duenna nonsense*) – **diatheme** (*that evening*)

Commentary:

The notion of duenna is being brought back to light after it was introduced much earlier in the text when the reader learns about ways of courting in the Victorian era. To abide by principles of etiquette of the time it was necessary that a duenna was present during a meeting of a future husband and a wife.

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*duenna*) + head (*nonsense*))

final adverbial – context-dependent, diatheme, semantically temporal setting

147. *The silence was terrible then, as tense as a bridge about to break, a tower to fall; unendurable in its emotion, its truth bursting to be spoken. Then suddenly there was a little cascade of coals from the fire.* (p. 302)

Translation:

Pak se náhle sesulo v krbu několik uhlíků.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials

FSP pattern:

Theme (*Then*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*suddenly*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a little cascade of coals from the fire*)

Commentary:

The final prepositional phrase is ambiguous as it may be interpreted also as an adverbial element. We tend to treat the phrase (*from the fire*) as an element within postmodification which specifies the head of the notional subject (*cascade*).

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*little*) + head

(*cascade*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*of coals*))

initial adverbial – context independent, setting

148. *The discreet sounds of washing ceased. There were various small rustlings – he supposed she was getting into the bed.* (p. 308)

Translation:

Diskrétní zvuky umývání ustaly. Ale dál se vedle ozýval tichý šramot; předpokládal, že se znovu ukládá do postele.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*various small rustlings*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*various small*) + head (*rustlings*))

149. *A dialogue began to form between his better and his worse self – or perhaps between him and that spreadeagled figure in the shadows at the church's end. [...]*

Then why are you now free of her?

There was no answer from Charles. (pp. 312 – 313)

Translation:

Charles neodpověděl.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with complex NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*answer from Charles*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*answer*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*from Charles*))

150. *He at last looked round at her, expecting to see her with her head bowed; but she was weeping openly, with her eyes on him; and as she saw him look, she made a motion, like some terrified, lost child, with her hands towards him, half-rose, took a single step, and then fell to her knees. There came to Charles then a sharp revulsion – not against her, but against the situation: his half-truths, his hiding of the essential.* (p. 328)

Translation:

Charles pocítil ostrý odpor, ne vůči ní, ale vůči situaci, v které se octl.

Type of existential construction: existential with 2 medial adverbials

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*came*) – **diatheme** (*to Charles then*) – **rheme** (*a sharp revulsion – not against her, but against the situation*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*sharp*) + head (*revulsion*) + postmodification (*not against her, but against the situation*))

medial adverbial 1 – context-dependent, theme, semantically setting (*to Charles*)

medial adverbial 2 – context-independent, diatheme, semantically setting (*then*)

Source: William Golding. *The Spire*. London: Faber and Faber. 1964.

Czech translation: Jan Čulík. Praha: Vyšehrad. 1989

151. *Mattins, diminished, its sounds so small they might be held in one hand, was nonetheless audible from the Lady Chapel at the other end of the cathedral, beyond the wood and canvas screen. There was a nearer sound that told – though the components were so mixed by echo as to be part of each other – that men were digging in earth and stone.* (p. 9)

Translation:

Zpěv jitřních hodin, s nimiž se uchýlil do mariánské kaple, zněl za látkovou zástěnou na druhém konci katedrály ztenčeně a slabě, že ho bylo možno potěžkat na dlani jedné ruky; zato však poblíž se ozývaly zvuky, ozvěnou smíšené v jeden hlučný celek, prozrazující, že se tu kope v zemi a do kamene.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a nearer sound that told that men were digging in earth and stone*)

Commentary:

The head of the nominal phrase (*sound*) constituting the notional subject is the element with the lowest degree of CD as it is context-dependent.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable (context-dependent head, context-independent modification)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*nearer*) + head (*sound*) + postmodification by a relative adnominal clause (*that told that men were digging in earth and stone*))

152. *But still Pangall stood his ground, looking up under his thatch of dark hair. There was dust on his brown tunic, his crossgartered legs, his old shoes.* (p. 14)

Translation:

Ale Pangall se nehýbal a vzhlížel k němu zpod kštiny tmavých vlasů. Na jeho hnědé vestě i na nohou s křížovými podvazky a na starých botách lpěl prach.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial, extended presentation scale
FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*dust*) – **specification** (*on his brown tunic, his crossgartered legs, his old shoes*)

Commentary:

Due to the expanse of the final adverbial and many new elements which move the communication further (we believe that the sentence is perspectived towards the fact that dust covered Pangall in great extent) we regard its FSP as specification.

Commentary on translation:

The FSP of Czech translation does not accord with the FSP of the original. It is due to the resistance that the Czech language offers in placing the rheme in preverbal positions. We imagine the translation might go as follows: *Prach byl všude, na jeho hnědé vestě, i na nohou s křížovými podvazky a na starých botách.*

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – single NP (*dust*)

final adverbial – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable (including both context-dependent elements (*his*) and context-independent ones),

153. *He bore down on the desk and managed to break up the rigor of his knees. He tottered a step or two before he could stand and walk erect. He smoothed out his cassock with his right hand, and while he was doing this, he remembered the tap and scrape and looked towards the north wall, where the dumb man sat, his mouth hanging open. There was a cloth on the pavement at his feet, and he scraped carefully at the lump of stone.* (pp. 22 – 23)

Translation:

Opřel se o desku klekátka a podařilo se mu překonat topornost kolen. Několik kroků vrávorál a pak se teprve napřímil a šel rovně. Pravou rukou si uhladil sutanu a přitom si uvědomil zvuky od severní zdi, kde seděl němý mladík s pootvřenými ústy a s hadrem u nohou a pečlivě opracovával kus kamene.

Type of existential construction:

FSP pattern: existential with final adverbial

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a cloth*) – **diatheme** (*on the pavement at his feet*)

Commentary:

The final adverbial though comprising context-independent elements (*pavement, feet*) constitutes the scene/setting of the existential construction. Semantically it does not move the communication any further and we believe that the clause is perspectived towards the *presence* of a cloth rather than towards the *placement* of the cloth.

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – single NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*cloth*))

final adverbial – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable, theme/setting

154. Father Adam reads a letter to Father Jocelin (and so the double quote):

‘ “*Master Godfrey wishes to strike out the last sentence, but I say he must leave it in. Are all the bones in your church so sanctified? You may say I have small prospect of heaven, but my hope is better. There is a place, or there was before your day, on the south side of the choir, where the sun comes in, between some old bishop and the Provoste Chantry. I think the High Altar could see me there and perhaps be more absentminded than you about those faults I still find so difficult entirely to repent of.* ” (p. 28)

Translation:

„Magistr Godfrey chce tuhle poslední větu škrtnout, ale já trvám na tom, aby ji tam nechal. Jsou všichni mrtví ve vašem kostele tak svatí? Možná řekneš, že mám malé vyhlídky na nebe, ale doufat přece mohu. Na jižní straně chóru je místo, nebo aspoň bývalo za Tvých předchůdců, mezi nějakým starým biskupem a proboštskou kaplí. Svítlí tam slunce a je tam, myslím, vidět od hlavního oltáře, jenž by byl asi lhostejnější než Ty k mým pokleskům, z kterých je tak obtížné se kát.“

Type of existential construction: existential with two final adverbials, extended presentation scale

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme 1** (*a place*) – **rheme 2 (specification 1)** (*on the south side of the choir*) – **rest of the rheme 1** (*where the sun comes in*) – **rheme 3 (specification 2)** (*between some old bishop and the Provoste Chantry*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*place*) + discontinuous postmodification (*where the sun comes in*))

penultimate adverbial – adverbial of place (*on the south side of the choir*), heterogeneous,

specification 1

final adverbial – adverbial of place (*between some old bishop and the Provoste Chantry*), heterogeneous, **specification 2**

155. “*The nave is empty. No one is standing guard.*”

Though he seemed asleep, Father Anselm was trembling very slightly. He opened his eyes but looked away.

“*The dust, my lord. You know how it is with this poor chest of mine.*”

“*There was no need for you to sit there. You have authority!*”

Anselm coughed delicately, tuh, tuh, tuh. (p. 31)

Translation:

„Hlavní loď je bez dozoru. Nikdo tam nehlídá.“

Ačkoli se zdálo, že spí, otec Anselm se téměř nezatelně chvěl. Otevřel oči, ale díval se jinam.

„To je tím prachem, pane děkane. Víte přece, že jsem slabý na prsa.“

„Nemusíte tam přece sedět sám. Někoho tam pošlete!“

Anselm lehce zakašlal.

Type of existential construction: bare negative existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*no need for you to sit there*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable (context-dependent element (*you*))

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*need*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*for you*) + postmodification by infinitive (*to sit there*))

156. *So he went back into the cathedral, and by the time he stood in the south transept, he had put Anselm out of his mind; for already there was less dust in the air, and what there was, hung diminishing.* (p. 36)

Translation:

Šel zpátky do katedrály a ve chvíli, kdy stanul v jižní lodi, už pustil Anselma z hlavy; ve vzduchu bylo méně prachu a i ten zbytek stále řídil.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials (initial and final)

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*For*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*already*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*less dust*) – **diatheme** (*in the air*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable (the notion of dust is dependent on a broader context as there are building works going on inside the cathedral and the dust is a source of great discomfort for all the people involved, the quantifier *less* introduces new information into the context)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*less*) + head (*dust*))

initial adverbials – transition proper oriented elements

final adverbial – context-independent: entirely irretrievable, thematic, semantically setting (*in the air*)

157. *The master builder's smile* was ambiguous as the Sacrist's had been.

“How would you set about building one of these pillars, reverend Father?”

Jocelin went to the pillar and peered closely at it. Each pipe in the cluster was thicker than a man's body. He passed his fingers down the surface of one.

“There. You see? These horizontal cracks, seams; what do you call them? Joists? They must have cut slices and then piled them, as children playing t checkers will pile one counter on another.”

Now there was a grimness in the master builder's smile. (p. 41)

Translation:

Mistr stavitel se dvojsmyslně usmál, tak jako předtím sakristán.

„Jak byste stavěl takovýhle pilíř, ctihodný otče?“

Jocelin přistoupil k sloupu a zblízka si ho prohlížel. Každá trubice svazku byla silnější než lidské tělo. Přešel prsty po jedné z nich.

„Tady. Vidíš? Ty vodorovné štěrby, ty spáry; jak tomu říkáte? Kvádry? Napřed museli vysekat z kamene jednotlivé kusy a pak je nastavěli na sebe, jako děti dávají na sebe kostky, když hrají dámu.“

Stavitelovi ztuhl úsměv na rtech.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials (initial and final)

FSP pattern:

Theme (*Now*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a grimness*) – **diatheme** (*in the master builder's smile*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*grimness*))

final adverbial – adverbial of place, context-dependent: entirely retrievable, setting

158. *It's that woman with her torrent, and her bold, shaken face. There are some women who are stronger than gates and bars by their very ignorance. I should rebuke her too for her presumption, teach her to know her place.* (p. 46)

Translation:

To kvůli té žvanivé ženské s drzým neklidným obličejem. Jsou ženy, jejichž hloupost je silnější než brány a mříže.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*some women who are stronger than gates and bars by their very ignorance*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*some*) + head (*women*) + complex postmodification by means of a relative adjectival clause (*who are stronger than gates and bars by their very ignorance*))

159. *But the rain came for three days, with only a half day to follow it of low cloud and soaked air; so that housewives hung what linen there was to wash before smouldering fires that dirtied more than they dried; and then there was wind and rain for a week.* (p. 51)

Translation:

Ale déšť trval tři dny a potom půl dne stály mraky nízko a vzduch byl vlhký; hospodyně rozvěšovaly vyprané prádlo nad čadícím krbem, který je víc zašpinil než usušil; a pak znova vítr a déšť celý týden.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Rheme (*what linen*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rest of the rheme** (*to wash*)

Commentary:

Our analysis is based upon the induced sentence ... *so that housewives hung whatever linen there was to wash ...*

The existential construction is incorporated into a nominal relative clause (*what linen there was to wash*) whose function is that of an object. There is a grammatically conditioned fronting of the notional subject (*what linen*) in the existential construction. The NS constitutes the rheme (semantically a phenomenon introduced onto the scene) together with the postmodifying infinitive (*to wash*).

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*what*) + head (*linen*) + postmodification (*to wash*))

160. *Once, when the rain had stopped, but the cavern of the nave was particularly noisome, Jocelin stopped by the model, to encourage himself. ¹He detached the spire with difficulty, because the wood was swollen, and held the thing devoutly, like a relic. ²He caressed it gently, cradling it in his arms, and looking at it all over, as a mother might examine her baby. ³It was eighteen inches long, squared for half its length and with tall windows, then bursting into a grove of delicate pinnacles, from among which the great spire rose, undecorated and slender with a tiny cross at the top. ⁴The cross was smaller than the one he wore hanging from his neck. ⁵He stood by the north west pillar, still cradling the spire, and telling himself that surely by now the flood must begin to sink. For there had been no rain for a week, though March was proving not windy, but dull. (p. 56)*

Translation:

Jocelin stál u severozápadního pilíře stále s věží v náručí a říkal si, že teď voda začne klesat. Týden už nepršelo, ale březel byl pošmourný, po větru ani památky.

Type of existential construction: negative existential with final adverbial, extended presentation scale

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*For*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*rain*) – **rheme 2 (specification)** (*for a week*)

Commentary:

The indices label number of sentences dividing the first and the second mention of the rain. In his study on retrievability span, Jan Firbas mentions the distance of seven sentences for a piece of information to remain retrievable from the context. (1995: 18) This would speak for the notional subject of the existential construction under examination to be context-dependent. However, the lack of rain is now presented in a new stronger form, compare *there had been*

NO rain with the rain had stopped. The clause is perspectived towards **the length** of the period without rain.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (partly retrievable)

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*rain*))

final adverbial – adverbial of time, context-independent: entirely irretrievable, specification

161. “*They are a trial to us all, my son. I admit it. We must be patient. Didn’t you say once that this is your house? There was sinful pride in that, but also loyalty and service. [...]” (p. 61)*

Translation:

„Je to zkouška pro nás pro všechny, můj synu. To uznávám. Musíme být trpěliví. Což jsi jednou neřekl, že je to tvůj dům? Byla v tom hříšná pýcha, ale také ochota sloužit. [...]“

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial followed by the second element of multiple NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme 1** (*sinful pride*) – **diatheme** (*in that*) – **rheme 2** (*but also loyalty and service*)

└─┬─┘ └─┬─┘
focalizer rheme proper

Commentary:

Elements *loyalty and service* are rhematized by *also*, which marks them as conveyers of additional irretrievable information.

(After Jan Firbas 1995: 36. He comments, “ ‘Addition’ is an essential trait of the meaning of *also*. Conveying this trait, *also* is a marker of additional information *par excellence*.” This note is in his study about the retrievability span. When he speaks of re-expressing the same referent, he points out, that “re-expression may be linked with additional irretrievable information” (p. 20). The phenomenon of additional irretrievable information plays an important role in interpreting an element as rhematic despite its being re-expressed. In our case re-expression is not involved but the rhematic nature of elements *loyalty and pride* is accentuated by the presence of rhematizer *also*.)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – compound NP (3 elements in the multiple NS: *sinful pride, loyalty and service*)

final adverbial – context-dependent: entirely retrievable (*in that*), its antecedent is in the preceding sentence (*that* = saying that *this is your house*)

162. *The army made a constant noise, however Jocelin complained to Roger Mason. There was a constant adzing going on in the shed outside the north transept, and a constant banging and thumping from the roof over the vault. (pp. 68 – 69)*

Translation:

Tak byl v katedrále navzdory děkanovým stížnostem neustálý hluk. Z přístřešku u severního křídla, kde pracovali tesaři, se ozývaly rány sekerou, ze střechy nad klenbou se ozývalo bouchání a mlácení.

Type of existential construction: existential with compound NP

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme 1** (*a constant adzing going on in the shed outside the north transept*) – **rheme 2** (*and a constant banging and thumping from the roof over the vault*)

Commentary:

It seems we are dealing here with two notional subjects in coordination. According to the presence of one verb we estimate the clause comprises two coordinated subjects within one existential construction. Compare the Czech translation where two independent clauses are employed to introduce *adzing* and *banging and thumping* on the scene, but where the verb is repeated.

We understand the prepositional phrase *in the shed outside the north transept* not being an element within the main predication but complementing the participial predication *going on*. The prepositional phrase *from the roof over the vault* is being understood as a postmodifying element.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (*the north transept* is dependent on a broader context since the story takes place in a cathedral: associative anaphora)

notional subject (form) – compound NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*constant*) + head (*adzing*) + postmodification by a participle (*going on in the shed outside the north transept*))

163. *And Pangall chipped away at a wall, or stood, leaning moodily on his broom, or limped away from the mocking army; and Goody Pangall passed through the crossways – but there were other ways she could get to her house – not looking up, with an effort that bent her neck; and Roger Mason, sighted at a chalk mark – Sometimes Jocelin surprised himself; or rather a dark corner of his mind surprised him, forcing his mouth to utter words that had no logical meaning, but seemed connected directly to triumph or uneasiness.* (p. 75)

Translation:

Goody Pangallová chodila přes staveniště – i když domů vedly také jiné cesty – a usilovně s hlavou skloněnou se snažila nedívat se napravo ani nalevo; a Roger Mason zkoumal průzorníkem křídovou značku.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*But*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*other ways she could get to her house*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*other*) + head (*ways*) + postmodification by means of relative adjectival clause (*she could get to her house*))

164. Opening of a new paragraph:

There came a sharp scream from by the south west pillar. Goody Pangall stood there, her basket still rolling at her feet. (p. 80)

Translation:

Od jihozápadního pilíře se ozval výkřik. Stála tam Goody Pangallová, košík se jí válel u nohou.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*came*) – **rheme** (*a sharp scream*) – **diatheme** (*from the south west pillar*)

notional subject (context) – entirely context-independent

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*sharp*) + head (*scream*))

final adverbial – adverbial of place, heterogeneous (the pillar: associative anaphora; south west: new element), setting

165. *“I’ll tell you a thing. What’s closer than brother and brother, mother and child? What’s closer than hand and mouth, closer than the thought to the mind? It’s vision, Roger. I don’t expect you to understand that – ”*

“But of course I understand!”

Jocelin lifted his face and smiled suddenly.

“You do, do you?”

“But there comes a point when vision’s no more than a child’s playing let’s pretend.” (p. 85)

Translation:

„Ale přijde chvíle, kdy vize není víc než dětská hra na schovávanou.“

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*But*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*comes*) – **rheme** (*a point when vision’s no more than a child’s playing let’s pretend*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*point*) + postmodification by means of relative adjectival clause (*when vision’s no more than a child’s playing let’s pretend*))

166. *And as he lay, waiting for the shuddering arms to spring apart and the weight to crush them both, he knew that something else he had seen was printed on his eye for ever. Whenever there should be darkness and no thought, the picture would come back.* (p. 90)

Translation:

A jak ležel a s hrůzou čekal, že jeho rozpřážené paže povolí a masa je rozdrtí oba dva, uvědomil si, že v jeho mysli utkvěl navždycky jiný obraz a že se bude vracet, kdykoli tam nastane tma a zmizí myšlení.

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*Whenever*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*should be*) – **rheme** (*darkness and no thought*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – compound NP (*darkness and no thought*)

initial adverbial – transition proper oriented

167. *The hole through the vault into the chimney was smaller, because some of the beams that would make a flooring for the vast apartment of the lower stage were already in place. But there was still a wide space left in the middle for the lifting of stone and wood.* (p. 95)

Translation:

Ale uprostřed ještě zela velká díra pro dopravu kamene a dřeva.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials, the thematic one followed by discontinuous postmodification, extended presentation scale

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*But*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*still*) – **rheme 1** (*a wide space left in the middle*) – **rheme 2 (specification)** (*for the lifting of stone and wood*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent (the definite article in *the middle* denotes situationally unique object which is mentioned for the first time and is thus context-independent, see Dušková 2000: 46-47)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*wide*) + head (*space*) + postmodification by a participial (*left*) + complementation of the participial predication by a prepositional phrase (*in the middle*))

final adverbial – adverbial of purpose, context-independent, specification

Commentary:

We believe we have a case of potentiality here.

There is a twofold interpretation possible of the prepositional phrase *in the middle*. It can be understood either as a part of the main predication (cf. there was a space in the middle) or it can function as an adverbial complementation of the participial predication (cf.left in the middle....), which is the interpretation we incline towards.

168. *Suddenly everything was easier in Jocelin's head. There was sunlight at last, flashing round him.* (p. 101)

Translation:

Konečně se kolem něj rozzářilo světlo.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial followed by discontinuous postmodification

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*sunlight*) – **diatheme** (*at last*) – **rest of the rheme** (*flashing round him*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*sunlight*) + discontinuous postmodification by a participle (*flashing round him*))

169. *The earth is a huddle of noseless men grinning upward, there are gallows everywhere, the blood of childbirth never ceases to flow, nor sweat in the furrow, the brothels are down there and drunk men lie in the gutter.* (p. 107)

Translation:

Je to zmatená směsice beznosých, šklebících se lidí, všude šibenice, krev rodiček teče bez přestání, brázdy skrápěné potem, bordely, opilci ležící v škarpě.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial, extended presentation scale

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*gallows*) – **specification** (*everywhere*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – simple NP (*gallows*)

final adverbial – context-independent: entirely irretrievable, adverbial of place, specification

170. *And the work, as he knew, experienced in the consuming steadfastness of his will, the work was blessed. There were astonishing days in December, when the church never knew the sun, when the nave was like a cavern.* (p. 112)

Translation:

V prosinci nastaly divné dny, kdy chrám nepoznal slunce, kdy se loď podobala jeskyni.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial followed by discontinuous postmodification

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*astonishing days*) – **diatheme** (*in December*) – **rest of the rheme** (*when the church never knew the sun, when the nave was like a cavern*)

Commentary:

The communication in the sentence under the focus is perspectived towards the presentation of *astonishing days* onto the scene and further towards the characterization of the days.

The adverbial of time, however, brings a new piece of information for the reader. The plot of the story is situated within a cathedral and the reader learns about the time of the outside world by sporadic mentions of the season of the year.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous (*the church, the nave* are dependent on a broader context)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*astonishing*) + head (*days*) + discontinuous postmodification by means of two relative adjectival clauses (*when the church never knew the sun, when the nave was like a cavern*))

final adverbial – adverbial of time, context-independent: entirely irretrievable, scene-setting

171. “*I understand you, my son. It’s the little dare all over again. Shall I tell you where we’ve come? Think of the mayfly that lives for no more than one day. That raven over there may have some knowledge of yesterday and the day before. The raven knows what the sunrise is like. Perhaps he knows there’ll be another one. But the mayfly doesn’t. [...]*” (pp. 116 – 117)

Translation:

Pamatuje se, jaký byl východ slunce. Možná, že i ví, že bude další.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with premodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*will be*) – **rheme** (*another one*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*another*) + head (*one*))

172. “*I must go down now, Roger. There’s something I have to do.*” (p. 123)

Translation:

„Musím jít dolů, Rogere. Čeká tam na mě nějaký úkol.“

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*something I have to do*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable (context-dependent *I*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*something*) + postmodification by relative adjectival clause (*I have to do*))

173. *I must go to her, he thought, I must save what can be saved; but even as he had thought, he felt the prurience in him like a leprosy, and knew that if he were to find her alone there would be nothing for it but to ask, and pry, and demand, without knowing what he wanted.* (p. 128)

Translation:

Musím jít za ní, říkal si, musím zachránit, co se dá; ale už v té myšlence byla chlípnost jako malomocenství a cítil, že najde-li ji samotnou, nedokáže nic jiného než ptát se, vyzvídat, zkoumat, aniž věděl co.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial followed by discontinuous postmodification

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*would be*) – **rheme** (*nothing for it but to ask, and pry, and demand, without knowing what he wanted*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable (context-dependent for *it, he*)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*nothing*) + postmodification by means of two prepositional phrases (*for it but to ask, and pry, and demand, without knowing what he wanted*))

174. *The boys of the songschool had left their game on the sill of the arcade again. He could not see the squares of the board scratched in stone, but he could see the white, bone counters of the game that lay on it. He could see some of them; but only some, for the stone between the battlements cut off a corner of the board from his eye. There was a kind of a childish security in looking at the game, the white counters, one, two, three, four, five – (p. 133)*

Translation:

Díval se dolů s dětinským pocitem bezpečí: jedna, dvě, tři, čtyři, pět bílých kostek –

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a kind of a childish security*) – **diatheme** (*in looking at the game*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*kind*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*of a childish security*))

final adverbial – context-dependent: entirely retrievable, adverbial of place

175. *Then he let out his breath, looked closely at the grain of the wood before him, and spoke aloud, but humbly.*

“I’m not very intelligent.”

As if his angel had whispered to him, there was help at hand. (p. 140)

Translation:

Jako by mu to pošeptal jeho anděl, naskytla se hned pomoc:

„Mysli na ni, jaká byla předtím!“

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*help at hand*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*help*) + modification by a prepositional phrase (*at hand*))

176. *Then Jocelin would nod to himself, and say wisely:*

“He doesn’t care if he lives or dies.”

All the same, when she haunted him next day and he bound himself to Roger to be rid of her, he found he had misjudged him. Roger must care whether he lived or died otherwise the fear would not have laid so obvious a hand on him. There was no clear way of explaining why the fear was so obvious in the master builder. (p. 144)

Translation:

Rogerovi určitě není jedno, zda je živ nebo mrtev, protože jinak by tak zřejmě nepodléhal strachu. Avšak proč se tolik bojí, nebylo jasné.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*clear way of explaining why the fear was so obvious in the master builder*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*clear*) + head (*way*) + postmodification by means of an extensive prepositional phrase (*of explaining why the fear was so obvious in the master builder*))

177. *“What’s this thing called, my son? And this?”*

But Roger Mason would have none of him. In the end he shouted back.

“What’s what? There aren’t any names for bits of stone and wood. That thing fits on that thing, which’ll fit on that thing – perhaps. Leave me alone!” (p. 146)

Translation:

„Co pořád máte? Kusy kamene a dřeva nemají jméno. Tohle a tohle patří k sobě a to zas k tamtomu. Dejte mi pokoj!“

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*aren’t*) – **rheme** (*any names for bits of stone and wood*)

Commentary:

The final prepositional phrase operates as a postmodification which semantically defines what types of names are meant.

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*any*) + head (*names*) + postmodification by means of a prepositional phrase (*for bits of stone and wood*))

178. *Presently Jehan came up again, handed the plumb and coil of line to the master builder, then looked at Jocelin. There was that in his face which had to be met and known. Jocelin heard his voice crack in the high giggle as he used it.* (p. 151)

Translation:

Za chvíli se Jehan opět objevil, vrátil závaží i šňůru a podíval se na Jocelina. V jeho obličejí bylo něco naléhavého. Děkan si uvědomil, že jeho vlastní hlas zní opět jako křečovitě uchichtnutí.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial followed by discontinuous postmodification

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*that*) – **diatheme** (*in his face*) – **rest of the rheme** (*which had to be met and known*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable (*that* is cataphoric)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*that* – carries the stress) + postmodification by a relative adjectival clause)

final adverbial – context-dependent: partly retrievable, adverbial of place, scene/setting

179. *He looked at the curved pillars, and wondered round the church until the silence and the golden marks of feet drove him back to the ladders. He climbed them again, and the flimsier ladders that were lashed among the octagons. Because he knew this time there was nothing to be done but wait, he went slowly and noted how even that made his heart trot.* (p. 154)

Translation:

Protože tentokrát věděl, že nezbývá nic než čekat, lezl pomalu a všiml si, že i tak se mu zrychluje tep.

Type of existential construction: negative existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*this time*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*nothing to be done but wait*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – NP (head (*nothing*) + multiple postmodification by an infinitive (*to be done*) and a prepositional phrase (*but wait*))

initial adverbial – context-dependent: entirely retrievable, scene/setting

180. *He found that though they could neither feel nor see his angel they drew some comfort from it; and that way, August came in and went out, and the spire drew towards its end. They needed the comfort of his angel, in those days, since the wind began to blow. There was one August gale from the south west that set the spire swaying like a mast; but though the pillars were bent, they did not break.* (p. 158)

Translation:

Od jihozápadu přišla vichřice, která věž rozkývala jako stožár, pilíře se však, i když byly prohnuté, nezlomily.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*one August gale from the south west that set the spire swaying like a mast*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable (*the spire* is a context-dependent element)

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*one*) + premodification (*August*) + head (*gale*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*from the south west*) + postmodification by means of a relative adjectival clause (*that set the spire swaying like a mast*))

181. *He heard Anselm speak softly.*

“Why shouldn’t he see him as he is?”

After that, there was a pause, while the crowd of them became smaller than the smallest children of the choir. (p. 162)

Translation:

Zaslechl Anselmův hlas.

Proč by s ním nemohl mluvit tak, jak je?“

Pak nastalo ticho a dav se zmenšil tak, že byl menší než nejmladší zpěvák sboru.

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*After that*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a pause*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*pause*))

initial adverbial –adverbial of time, context-dependent: entirely retrievable, scene/setting

182. “*What did you mean about people being ‘built in ’? ’*”

He held his head in his hands, shut his eyes and swayed from side to side.

“I don’t know. There aren’t enough words. The complications – ” (p. 167)

Translation:

„Nevím. Chybějí mi slova. Je to složité – “

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*aren’t*) – **rheme** (*enough words*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*enough*) + head (*words*))

183. *Once he heard a crash and clatter from somewhere among the roofs of the deanery and started up. After that, he lay flat no longer, but listened, propped on one elbow in the thick darkness. He saw the spire fall a hundred times – heard it fall a hundred times until the gale beat in his very head. He tried to doze but could not tell which was sleeping and which waking since both were the same nightmare. He tried to think of other things, only to find that the spire was so firmly based in his head there was nothing else to think of.* (p. 172)

Translation:

Zkusil myslet na jiné věci, ale zjistil, že má věž v hlavě zakotvenou tak pevně, že na nic jiného myslet nemůže.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*nothing else to think of*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*nothing*) + modification by an adjective in postposition (*else*) + postmodification by an infinitive (*to think of*))

184. *When he saw the deserted altar before him the devils raged as they leapt and swung from the main arch. He fumbled at the altar, then snatched the silver box as if it contained nothing but an ordinary nail. There came a smash from the south transept, the crash and shatter of stone; from the north transept a boom and the icy skitter of glass.* (p. 175)

Translation:

V tu chvíli se ozvala z boční lodi rána a padalo kamení; odjinud bylo slyšet praskot a ledové tříštění skla.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*came*) – **rheme** (*a smash*) – **diatheme** (*from the south transept*) – **rest of rheme** (*the crash and shatter of stone*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*smash*) + specifying apposition (*the crash and shatter of stone*))

final adverbial – heterogeneous (dependent on the broader context of the book: the whole story takes place inside a cathedral, the modification *south* is a new element)

185. *In this uncountryside there was blue sky and light, consent and no sin.* (p. 178)

Translation:

V tomto nezemském kraji byla modrá obloha a jas, souhlas a bezhříšnost.

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*In this uncountryside*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*blue sky and light, consent, and no sin*)

Commentary:

The initial adverbial is worth commenting upon.

The passage preceding our extracted sentence engages in nightmarish visions of Father Jocelin, the main protagonist of the novel. The reader is well aware that the plot of the passage takes place in the mindscape of the protagonist because a character featuring in the visions is in reality dead. For the first time, however, the vision is named in the existential construction under examination. Interestingly, the reader acquires a new piece of information, viz. the poetic and unusual denotation of Jocelin's visions, yet the reader perceives it as an entirely context-dependent element because the notion of vision-nightmare is extremely activated. But there is a sparkle of something new being communicated even in such a thematic element.

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – compound NP (multiple subject comprising 4 elements (*sky, light, consent, no sin*))

initial adverbial – context-dependent: predominantly retrievable (not entirely as there is a novel aspect in the way it is expressed), adverbial of place, scene/setting

186. *“Oh no, Jocelin! I came because of you – because of how you are. You must believe it!”*

“You worried about me? I, the provincial?”

“Your story is known in the country. In the world, I might say.”

“There's a sense in which your body would – forgive me – defile it.” (p. 183)

Translation:

„V jistém smyslu by je vaše tělo – promiňte – znesvětilo.“

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*a sense in which your body would defile it*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*sense*) + postmodification a relative adjectival clause (*in which your body would defile it*))

187. *Hours later, when the fire was nothing but embers, he spoke again.*

“There's a kinship among men who have sat by a dying fire and measured the worth of their life by it.” (p. 187)

Translation:

Lidé, kteří sedí u hasnoucího ohně a měří tím hodnotu svého života, jsou spříznění.

Type of existential construction: existential with final adverbial, extended presentation scale
FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*a kinship*) – **specification** (*among men who have set by a dying fire and measured the worth of their life by it*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*kinship*))

final adverbial – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable, adverbial of place, specification

188. “[...] *It was a winter’s evening, I remember, and by then, the nave was darkling. Those patriarchs up there glowed in the windows and the saints below them; and at every altar in the side aisles there were nests of the candles you had given.*” (p. 192)

Translation:

Vzpomínám si, že to bylo v zimě navečer a v chrámu se stmívalo. Nahoře u oken žhnuli patriarchové a pod nimi svatí; a v postranních lodích hořely u každého oltáře trsy svíček od vás.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*at every altar in the side aisles*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*nests of candles you had given*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*nests*) + postmodification by prepositional phrase (*of candles you had given*))

189. *And immediately the plant was visible to him, a riot of foliage and flowers and overripe, bursting fruit. There was no tracing its complications back to the root, no disentangling the anguished faces that cried out from among it; so he cried out himself, and then was silent.* (p. 194)

Translation:

Její složitost se nedala vystopovat až ke kořenům, ztrápené obličejové vykřikující z její spleti nebylo možno vyprostit; a tak vykřikl sám a pak nastalo ticho.

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential with compound NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*tracing its complications back to the root*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 2** (*disentangling the anguished faces that cried out from among it*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – compound NP (multiple subject with 2 elements: *no tracing, no disentangling*)

Note: the notional subject may be perceived as appositional

190. “*Help me!*”

It was as if these words were a key. He felt them shake him as Father Adam had been shaken. The shaking hurt his back and his head; but it was connected to an infinite sea of grief which sent out an arm to fill him and overflowed liberally at his eyes. He let them flow and ignored them for the sea engaged him fully. Then there was another arm; but this one was across his

chest, the hand grasping his shoulder. Another hand was wiping his face gently. (pp. 196 – 197)

Translation:

Ale bylo tu ještě další rameno; vlastně celá paže. Sahala mu přes prsa a ruka ho brala za loket. Druhá ruka mu jemně otírala obličej.

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*Then*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*another arm*)

“*Then* is context-independent, but expresses mere background information.” (Firbas 1992:64)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (premodification (*another*) + head (*arm*))

initial adverbial – adverbial of time, setting

191. *Anselm looked his way. There was a kind of stony embarrassment about him; and the words went with them.* (p. 200)

Translation:

Anselm se díval před sebe. Zdálo se, že kamení rozpaky; a jeho slova kameněla též.

Type of existential construction:

FSP pattern: bare existential with modified NS

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a kind of stony embarrassment about him*)

Commentary:

The final prepositional phrase (*about him*) semantically completes the notion of *stony embarrassment*. In our view it acts as a postmodifying element and it is a part of the rhematic section in the existential construction.

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*kind*) + postmodification by a prepositional phrase (*of stony embarrassment*) + further postmodification (*about him*))

192. “*Well. Forgive me, then.*”

“*Naturally I forgive you. I forgive you.*”

“*I beg you. No forgiveness for this or that, for this candle or that insult. Forgive me for being what I am.*”

“*I said so.*”

“*Do you feel it Anselm? Tell me you feel it!*”

There were steps going down the stair; and after that, a long silence. (p. 203)

Translation:

Slyšel, jak odchází dolů po schodech; a potom dlouhé ticho.

Type of existential construction:

FSP pattern: bare existential with postmodified NS

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*steps going down the stair*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (head (*steps*) + postmodification by participle (*going down the stair*))

193. *Feet went away and returned with more feet and he spoke to them, as before.*
“Roger Mason. Roger Mason.”

At last there were woman's feet among the rest, and the hem of a red dress. The woman cried out and talked busily; but her words were easy to ignore as always. (p. 207)

Translation:

Nakonec se mezi ostatními objevily ženské nohy a lem červených šatů.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials and discontinuous subject
FSP pattern:

193. **Transition proper oriented element** (*At last*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme 1** (*woman's feet*) – **diatheme** (*among the rest*) – **rheme 2** (*and the hem of a red dress*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent

notional subject (form) – compound NP (2 elements in the multiple NS: *feet* and *the hem*)

final adverbial – *among the rest*, adverbial of place, context-dependent: entirely retrievable, scene/setting

194. “*You and your net. You drove me too high.*”

“*I was driven too. I was in some net or other.*”

He heard Roger sniffing into the bolster.

“*Too high. Too high.*”

All at once there was a clearness in Jocelin's head. He saw exactly what could be done with one bulk of the formless, the incommunicable. (p. 210)

Translation:

V Jocelinově hlavě se najednou rozjasnilo.

Type of existential construction: existential with more adverbials (initial and final)

FSP pattern:

Transition proper oriented element (*All at once*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a clearness*) – **diatheme** (*in Jocelin's head*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – simple NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*clearness*))

final adverbial – adverbial of place, heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable (Jocelin's character is highly activated because the sentence is extracted out of a passage where a dialogue between Father Jocelin and Roger, the master builder, is taking place)

195. “[...] *That's why I must know what kind of creature she was; because if she knew, knew what happened to her husband, even consented to it perhaps – there would be no horror as deep – And of course a creature like that would haunt me!*” (p. 213)

Translation:

„A proto musím vědět, co byla zač; protože jestli věděla, co se stalo s jejím mužem – jestli to věděla a dokonce s tím třeba i souhlasila – pak je to hrůza hrůzoucí; a není divu, že mě pak taková bytost straší!“

Type of existential construction: negative bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*would be*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*horror as deep*)

Commentary:

The reader already knows that Rachel (*she* in our extract) haunts Father Jocelin as her death affected him deeply. However, Roger, the master builder (to whom Jocelin is speaking) is not aware of what is happening in Jocelin's mind; to him the whole of the notional subject is entirely new. Also, the notion of *horror* is not activated as it is brought back on the scene long after the last mention of it.

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*no*) + head (*horror*) + postmodification by a comparative (*as deep*))

196. “*Loo! Loo! Loo!*”

He was flat on his face, he was looking at legs and the light from a doorway on the filth of the gutter. Then there was a spreading silence. (p. 215)

Translation:

Pak všechno poněnáhu utichlo.

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*Then*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a spreading silence*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*spreading*) + head (*silence*))

initial adverbial – setting

197. *He would speak wordlessly to himself above the body.*

Where was I then?

And always, the answer would come, wordlessly.

Nowhere.

There was a bitter stuff to drink, poppy perhaps, which he thought sometimes, was what allowed him to drift and swim so above the prone body. (p. 217)

Translation:

Dávali mu pít něco hořkého, asi odvar z makovic, a někdy si myslel, že právě to mu umožňuje se vznést a plout nad tělem, které leží v posteli.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with heavily postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a bitter stuff to drink, poppy perhaps, which he thought sometimes, was what allowed him to drift and swim so above the prone body*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + premodification (*bitter*) + head (*stuff*) + postmodification by an infinitive (*to drink*) + apposition (*poppy perhaps*) + postmodification by a relative adjectival clause (*which he thought sometimes, was what allowed him to drift and swim so above the prone body*))

198. Opening of a new paragraph:

Once there were candles, voices murmuring, and the touch of oil. He floated above the unction which had relevance to nothing but the leaden body; and a gap came. (p. 219)

Translation:

Pak jednou rozsvítili svíčky, slyšel tlumené hlasy a pocítil dotek oleje.

Type of existential construction: existential with initial adverbial

FSP pattern:

Diatheme (*Once*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*candles, voices murmuring, and the touch of oil*)

notional subject (context) – context-independent: entirely irretrievable

notional subject (form) – compound NP (multiple NS comprising of 3 elements: *candles, voices, touch of oil*)

initial adverbial – setting

199. *But a face came between him and the sunlight, leaning down, shaken, redrimmed as to the eyes, the black hair fallen in snakes that brushed over him, the mouth flashing open and shut. There was a wilderness about her attack that made him indifferent to it, since he could not follow it successively.* (p. 220)

Translation:

Její vzrušený útok ho nechával lhostejným, neboť nedovolil rozeznat jednotlivosti.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with postmodified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*wilderness about her attack that made him indifferent to it*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (determiner (*a*) + head (*wilderness*) + postmodification by a complex prepositional phrase (*about her attack that made him indifferent to it*))

200. *Suddenly he found he had to bite the air, bite and hold on. Hands were heaving him upright so that his chest got air for a moment without his trying. The panic went out of his chest but beat about him.*

(New paragraph) *There were two eyes looking at him through the panic.* (p. 222)

Translation:

V tom zmatku se na něj dívaly dvě oči.

Type of existential construction: bare existential with modified NS

FSP pattern:

Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*two eyes looking at him through the panic*)

notional subject (context) – heterogeneous: predominantly irretrievable

notional subject (form) – complex NP (quantifier (*two*) + head (*eyes*) + postmodification by a participle (*looking at him through the panic*))

II. Tables (200 instances quantified in 4 tables)

List of Abbreviations Used in Tables

P – positive sentence/clause

N – negative sentence/clause

I – interrogative sentence/clause

(c) – compound notional subject

pot – a case of potentiality

x – marks the fact that the targeted category applies to a particular example (used with categories ‘context-independent subject’, ‘heterogeneous subject’, ‘context-dependent subject’)

	Bare Existential	Simple NS	Modified NS	Existential with Adverbial	Initial Position	Final Position	Medial Position (before the notional S)	More Adverbials	Final Element Indeterminate btw Mod and Adv	Context-independent S	Heterogeneous Subject	Context-dependent Subject
EXAMPLES												
1. <i>there is now no smooth road into the future</i>									pot.	x		
2. <i>Otherwise there were no near relatives .</i>					N					x		
3. <i>There was a blank of insentience .</i>		P								x		
4. <i>there was something better, something higher</i>		P (c)								x		
5. <i>The amazing, the profound, the unbelievable thrill there was in passionately talking to some really clever young man by the hour, resuming day after day for months</i>		P							pot.		x	
6. <i>and there was no child .</i>			N								x	
7. <i>Only there was something in their deep-mouthed slurring of the dialect , and the thresh-thresh of their hob-nailed pit-boots as they trailed home in gangs on the asphalt from work that was terrible and a bit mysterious.</i>		P							pot.		x	
8. <i>There had been no welcome home for the young squire, no festivities, no deputation, not even a single flower .</i>			N (c)								x	
9. <i>There was no communication between Wragby Hall and Tevershall village, none .</i>					N				pot.	x		
10. <i>But there was no touch, no actual contact.</i>			N							x		
11. <i>There was no other standard.</i>			N							x		
12. <i>There was no organic connection with the thought and expression that had gone before .</i>			N							x		
13. <i>As for Clifford's writing, it's smart but there's nothing in it.</i>			N						pot.		x	
14. <i>what did her father mean by saying there was nothing in Clifford's writing?</i>			N						pot.		x	
15. <i>What else could there be?</i>			I							x		
16. <i>what there was in the moment was everything .</i>					P							x
17. <i>these stories Sir Malcolm said there was nothing in,</i>			N						pot.		x	
18. <i>Why should there be anything in them, ... ?</i>			I						pot.		x	
19. <i>... there were always people in the house .</i>								P		x		
20. <i>There was silence for some minutes.</i>					P					x		
21. <i>There were occasional spasms of Michaelis.</i>			P							x		
22. <i>There was a gorgeous talk on Sunday evening, when the conversation drifted again to love.</i>					P						x	
23. <i>But there was no game; no pheasants.</i>										x		
24. <i>there were days when it all became utterly blank and nothing .</i>			P								x	
25. <i>There was nothing now but this empty treadmill of what Clifford called the integrated life, the long living together of two people, who are in the habit of being in the same house with one another</i>						N					x	
26. <i>There was the man to consider, and it was curious,</i>			P							x		
27. <i>there wasn't a man in the world whose children you wanted</i>					P					x		
28. <i>But don't you think there is something special about him?</i>			P						pot.			x
29. <i>There might even be real men, in the next phase</i>					P					x		
30. <i>And there was a sparkle of yellow jasmine by the door</i>					P					x		
31. <i>Are there two keys?</i>			I								x	
32. <i>when there seemed to be no wind</i>			N								x	
33. <i>Oh, there's not much difference in men</i>						N			pot.	x		
34. <i>it's because there's no rising</i>			N								x	
35. <i>there were two great groups of dogs wrangling for the bitch goddess</i>			P							x		
36. <i>And Mrs. Bolton was carefully dressing him in evening clothes, for there were important business guests in the house</i>						P				x		
37. <i>And there was something so mute and forlorn in her,</i>			P						pot.		x	
38. <i>Oh, if only there were other men to be with, to fight that sparkling electric Thing outside there, to preserve the tenderness of life, the tenderness of women, and the natural riches of desire</i>						P				x		
39. <i>There was a curious warning pleading in his voice .</i>			P						pot.		x	
40. <i>There was a great relaying of the table, and the best cups brought and the best teapot.</i>			P							x		
41. <i>there was something about him</i>			P						pot.		x	
42. <i>By the way, dear boy, is there any foundation to the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby ?</i>						I					x	
43. <i>There was no mistaking it</i>			N								x	
44. <i>Oh, I felt, if it hadn't been for the pit, an them as runs the pit, there had been no leaving me</i>						N					x	
45. <i>There was a pause .</i>		P								x		
46. <i>There's sure to be a bad nut in a basketful</i>						P				x		
47. <i>If only there aren't more strikes!</i>		P								x		
48. <i>Then there is no common humanity between us all!</i>							N		pot.	x		
49. <i>There was half a moon shining</i>			P							x		
50. <i>There was a touch of appeal in her .</i>						P			pot.	x		
Number		7	26		1	13	1	2	15	29	19	2

	Bare Existential	Simple Notional S	Modified Notional S	Existential with Adverbial	Initial Position	Final Position	Medial Position (before the notional S)	More Adverbials	Final Element Indeterminate btw Mod and Adv	Context-independent S	Heterogeneous Subject	Context-dependent Subject
EXAMPLES												
51. there was just the chance that any oddity that caught the eye of the pursuer might be the same that had caught the eye of the pursued.		P									x	
52. what proof is there that this has anything to do with them?		I									x	
53. there may well be wonderful universes above us where reason is utterly unreasonable?					P			pot.		x		
54. there was no ultimate exit at all except through this front door, which was guarded by Ivan and the armoury					N				x			
55. that is all there is on this lawn.					P							x
56. There was again a silence						P			x			
57. There was a silence		P							x			
58. If there were a fashionable hotel in London which no man could enter who was under six foot					P				x			
59. There was a light immediately above the semicircular arch of this opening					P				x			
60. There never have been more than fifteen waiters at this place							N			x		
61. and there were no more than fifteen to-night					N					x		
62. there are the rococo excrescences – yourselves, let us say					P							x
63. There is the dead waiter, who was there when he could not be there.		P									x	
64. In the large entrance hall of the house there was ample room even for Sir Leopold and the removal of his wraps					P						x	
65. there ran through it a rage of improvisation which came chiefly from Crook the clown						P				x		
66. There were hollows and bowers at the extreme end of that leafy garden, in which the laurels and other immortal shrubs showed against sapphire sky and silver moon, even in that midwinter, warm colours of the south					P						x	
67. “before there is a minute more of this nonsense I must tell you something about myself as shortly as I can.”					P						x	
68. There was nobody there					N				x			
69. there had been nobody									x			
70. There is only one thing to be done		P								x		
71. There must be somebody pretty near her		P									x	
72. For many centuries there had never been a decent lord in Glengyle Castle							P		x			
73. we have all seen at a glance that there was something wrong about the last earl		P						pot.		x		
74. There is only one reason I know of for this being done		P									x	
75. “There are three headless men.” “standing round this open grave		P							pot.		x	
76. There are further peculiarities about this house, which must be described to start with, not only that the reader may understand this tragic tale, but also that he may realise what it was that the opening of the door revealed.					P				pot.		x	
77. when there was some evil quite near						P				x		
78. but there is something in the air of this place		P							pot.		x	
79. there is a long seat there under the veranda, where we can smoke out of the rain.						P					x	
80. There were twenty-three snipped papers,” resumed Brown unmoved, “and only twenty-two pieces snipped off											x	
81. Here is Reed Island, if ever there was one.		P	P (c)									x
82. “There isn’t a good one.”			N									x
83. “There was badness enough in the captain taking all that money			P						pot.		x	
84. I don’t think there was much goodness in the prince giving it			P						pot.		x	
85. Was there another meaning in Saradine’s blend of brilliancy and abruptness?			I						pot.		x	
86. there is no time for nonsense			N							x		
87. There is only this one canoe			P								x	
88. The more he gave to silence Stephen the less chance there was of finally escaping Antonelli .			P								x	
89. till there had even come a whisper of insanity					P					x		
90. Certainly there was something hardly human about the colonel’s wolfish pursuit of pleasure					P				pot.		x	
91. There was an unhappy silence			P							x		
92. There are two men standing outside this shop,” went on the blacksmith with ponderous lucidity, “good tradesmen in Greenford whom you all know, who will swear that they saw me from before midnight till daybreak and long after in the committee-room of our Revival Mission, which sits all night, we save souls so fast.					P						x	
93. I believe the force in that blow was just the force there is in earthquakes, and no force less .						P						x
94. “I think there is something rather dangerous standing on these high places even to pray.”			P								x	
95. There are thousands of such curt, strenuous ladies in the offices of London						P				x		
96. But who was there in those hardly inhabited flats to murder anybody?						P				x		
97. where there has been love there must soon be hatred										x		
98. There was a pause			P							x		
99. there is no doubt that he deliberately killed her through her blindness .			N								x	
100. There was no human, perhaps no living, thing for a wide circle						N				x		
Number	4	22			5	15	2	2	9	19	26	5

	Bare Existential	Simple Notional S	Modified Notional S	Existential with Adverbial	Initial Position	Final Position	Medial Position (before the notional S)	More Adverbials	Final Element Indeterm. btw Mod and Adv	Context-independent S	Heterogeneous Subject	Context-dependent S
EXAMPLES												
101. <i>There came a stronger gust of wind,</i>		P									x	
102. <i>There was only one answer to a crisis of this magnitude</i>		P									x	
103. <i>There would have been a place in the Gestapo for the lady</i>		P						pot.			x	
104. <i>But there was her only too visible sorrow, which showed she was a sinner,</i>		P									x	
105. <i>There was a tight and absurdly long coat to match; a canvas wideawake hat of an indeterminate beige; a massive ashplant, which he had bought on his way to the Cobb; and a voluminous rucksack, from which you might have shaken out an already heavy array of hammers, wrappings, notebooks, pillboxes, adzes, and heaven knows what else .</i>		P (c)									x	
106. <i>There was even a remote relationship with the Drake family,</i>		P									x	
107. <i>There runs, between Lyme Regis and Axmouth six miles to the west, one of the strangest coastal landscapes in Southern England .</i>						P			x			
108. <i>There had been Charles's daffodils and jonquils, whose perfume she now inhaled,</i>		P (c)									x	
109. <i>There were two or three meadows round it, running down the cliffs;</i>					P						x	
110. <i>Yet there had remained locally a feeling that Ware Commons was public property.</i>						P					x	
111. <i>There is only one good definition of God: the freedom that allows other freedoms to exist.</i>		P							x			
112. <i>"There is a world of difference between what may be accepted in London and what is proper here.</i>		P						pot.			x	
113. <i>On one day there was a long excursion to Sidmouth;</i>				P				pot.	x			
114. <i>But there was something in that face, which Charles examined closely in profile, that made him determine not to go .</i>					P			pot.			x	
115. <i>There was first of all a very material dispute to arbitrate upon</i>		P							x			
116. <i>Unfortunately there was now a duenna present – Mrs Tranter's cook.</i>							P				x	
117. <i>There was a longer silence .</i>		P							x			
118. <i>There was, too, something faintly dark about him,</i>						P		pot.			x	
119. <i>There is a clever German doctor who has recently divided melancholia into several types.</i>		P							x			
120. <i>There must have been something sexual in their feelings?</i>		I						pot.			x	
121. <i>"There is no reason why you should give me anything."</i>		N									x	
122. <i>There was talk of marriage.</i>		P										x
123. <i>And then too there was that strangely Egyptian quality among the Victorians; that claustrophilia we see so clearly evidenced in their enveloping, mummifying clothes, their narrow-windowed and -corridorred architecture, their fear of the open and of the naked.</i>							P				x	
124. <i>"There are fruit. Though bitter."</i>		P										x
125. <i>There was still deception in the flesh, or Ernestina, to be faced.</i>		P									x	
126. <i>There were new curtains – and the carpets,</i>		P (c)							x			
127. <i>There was thunder in the offing, as in his heart .</i>							P		x			
128. <i>There was, curiously, some faint resemblance to Sarah in the face;</i>							P				x	
129. <i>There are some men who are consoled by the idea that</i>		P									x	
130. <i>there are women less attractive than their wives;</i>		P									x	
131. <i>there are more attractive.</i>		P									x	
132. <i>and the defence established that there had been none.</i>		N									x	
133. <i>there was something mysteriously religious about them,</i>		P						pot.			x	
134. <i>Yet there rose in him, and inextinguishably, a desire to protect.</i>							P		x			
135. <i>There is talk in the town of committing you to an institution</i>						P					x	
136. <i>There was a distinct stir in his loins.</i>						P		pot.	x			
137. <i>There were brothels there, and dance-halls and gin-palaces;</i>						P			x			
138. <i>There was a faint mist, compounding the scent of the spring verdure from the Park across the street and the old familiar soot.</i>											x	
139. <i>There pressed on Charles more than the common human instinct to preserve personal identity;</i>		P										
140. <i>there lay behind him all those years of thought, speculation, self-knowledge.</i>						P			x			
141. <i>Then there came out of nowhere Sarah's face</i>							P				x	
142. <i>Was there some delicate way he could ask?</i>		I										x
143. <i>There was not.</i>		N										x
144. <i>There are two kinds of hangover</i>		P							x			
145. <i>He began to wonder if there wasn't something of Uriah Heep beginning to erupt on the surface of Sam's personality</i>		N									x	
146. <i>there was to be no duenna nonsense that evening.</i>						N			x			
147. <i>Then suddenly there was a little cascade of coals from the fire.</i>							P	pot.			x	
148. <i>There were various small rustlings</i>		P							x			
149. <i>There was no answer from Charles.</i>		N						pot.			x	
150. <i>There came to Charles then a sharp revulsion – not against her, but against the situation</i>							P				x	
Number		2	28		1	6	5	8	10	16	21	3

	Bare Existential	Simple Notional S	Modified Notional S	Existential with Adverbial	Initial Position	Final Position	Medial Position (before the notional S)	More Adverbials	Final Element Indeterminate btw Mod and Adv	Context-independent S	Heterogeneous Subject	Context-dependent Subject
EXAMPLES												
151. <i>There was a nearer sound that told – [...] – that men were digging in earth and stone</i>			P							x		
152. <i>There was dust on his brown tunic, his crossgartered legs, his old shoes.</i>					P				x			
153. <i>There was a cloth on the pavement at his feet, and he scraped carefully at the lump of stone</i>					P				x			
154. <i>There is a place, [...], on the south side of the choir, where the sun comes in, between some old bishop and the Provoste Chantry</i>							P		x			
155. <i>“There was no need for you to sit there</i>			N									
156. <i>for already there was less dust in the air</i>							P			x		
157. <i>Now there was a grimness in the master builder’s smile</i>							P	pot.	x			
158. <i>There are some women who are stronger than gates and bars by their very ignorance</i>			P						x			
159. <i>so that housewives hung what linen there was to wash before smouldering fires that dirtied more than they dried</i>			P						x			
160. <i>For there had been no rain for a week</i>					N					x		
161. <i>There was sinful pride in that, but also loyalty and service</i>					P							
162. <i>There was a constant adzing going on in the shed outside the north transept, and a constant banging and thumping from the roof over the vault</i>			P (c)					pot.		x		
163. <i>but there were other ways she could get to her house</i>			P							x		
164. <i>There came a sharp scream from by the south west pillar</i>					P			pot.	x			
165. <i>“But there comes a point when vision’s no more than a child’s playing let’s pretend.”</i>			P							x		
166. <i>Whenever there should be darkness and no thought, the picture would come back</i>			N (c)							x		
167. <i>But there was still a wide space left in the middle for the lifting of stone and wood</i>							P	pot.		x		
168. <i>There was sunlight at last, flashing round him</i>					P					x		
169. <i>there are gallows everywhere</i>					P				x			
170. <i>There were astonishing days in December, when the church never knew the sun, when the nave was like a cavern</i>					P					x		
171. <i>there’ll be another one</i>			P							x		
172. <i>There’s something I have to do</i>			P							x		
173. <i>alone there would be nothing for it but to ask, and pry, and demand, without knowing what he wanted</i>			P					pot.		x		
174. <i>There was a kind of a childish security in looking at the game</i>					P				x			
175. <i>there was help at hand</i>			P						x			
176. <i>There was no clear way of explaining why the fear was so obvious in the master builder</i>			N							x		
177. <i>There aren’t any names for bits of stone and wood</i>			N							x		
178. <i>There was that in his face which had to be met and known</i>					P					x		
179. <i>this time there was nothing to be done but wait</i>					N					x		
180. <i>There was one August gale from the south west that set the spire swaying like a mast</i>			P					pot.		x		
181. <i>after that there was a pause</i>					P					x		
182. <i>There aren’t enough words</i>			N									
183. <i>there was nothing else to think of</i>			N									
184. <i>There came a smash from the south transept, the crash and shatter of stone</i>					P				x			
185. <i>In this uncountryside there was blue sky and light, consent and no sin</i>					P				x			
186. <i>“There’s a sense in which your body would – forgive me – defile it</i>			P							x		
187. <i>“There’s a kinship among men who have sat by a dying fire and measured the worth of their life by it.”</i>					P				x			
188. <i>and at every altar in the side aisles there were nests of the candles you had given</i>					P					x		
189. <i>There was no tracing its complications back to the root, no disentangling the anguished faces that cried out from among it</i>			N (c)							x		
190. <i>Then there was another arm</i>					P					x		
191. <i>There was a kind of stony embarrassment about him</i>			P					pot.		x		
192. <i>There were steps going down the stair</i>			P							x		
193. <i>At last there were woman’s feet among the rest, and the hem of a red dress</i>							P		x			
194. <i>All at once there was a clearness in Jocelin’s head</i>							P	pot.	x			
195. <i>there would be no horror as deep</i>			N							x		
196. <i>Then there was a spreading silence</i>					P					x		
197. <i>There was a bitter stuff to drink, poppy perhaps, which he thought sometimes, was what allowed him to drift and swim so above the prone body</i>			P								x	
198. <i>Once there were candles, voices murmuring, and the touch of oil</i>					P					x		
199. <i>There was a wildness about her attack that made him indifferent to it</i>			P					pot.		x		
200. <i>There were two eyes looking at him through the panic</i>			P							x		
Number		1	24		7	12	0	6	9	25	25	0

III. Separates

a. Bare Existentials – Syntacticosemantic Aspects

SIMPLE NP (12)

6. *and there was **no child**.*
32. *when there seemed to be **no wind***
34. *it's because there's **no rising***
45. *There was **a pause**.*
56. *There was again **a silence***
69. *there had been **nobody***
81. *Here is Reed Island, if ever there was **one**.*
98. *There was **a pause***
124. *“There are **fruit**. Though bitter.”*
132. *and the defence established that there had been **none**.*

COMPOUND NP (8)

4. *there was **something better, something higher***
8. *There had been **no welcome home** for the young squire, **no festivities, no deputation, not even a single flower**.*
23. *But there was **no game; no pheasants**.*
80. *There were **twenty-three snipped papers**,” resumed Brown unmoved, “and only **twenty-two pieces snipped off***
105. *There was a tight and absurdly long coat to match; a **canvas** wideawake **hat** of an indeterminate beige; a massive **ashplant**, which he had bought on his way to the Cobb; and a voluminous **rucksack**, from which you might have shaken out an already heavy array of hammers, wrappings, notebooks, pillboxes, adzes, and heaven knows what else.*
108. *There had been Charles's **daffodils and jonquils**, whose perfume she now inhaled,*
126. *There were new **curtains – and the carpets**,*
189. *There was **no tracing** its complications back to the root, **no disentangling** the anguished faces that cried out from among it*

COMPLEX NP (94)

• **modification by prepositional phrase/phrases – (19)**

3. *There was a blank of insentience.*
13. *As for Clifford's writing, it's smart but there's nothing in it.*
14. *what did her father mean by saying there was nothing in Clifford's writing?*
17. *these stories Sir Malcolm said there was nothing in*
18. *Why should there be anything in them, why should they last?*
41. *there was something about him*
42. *By the way, dear boy, is there any foundation to the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby?*
71. *There must be somebody pretty near her*
78. *but there is something in the air of this place*
86. *there is no time for nonsense*
103. *There would have been a place in the Gestapo for the lady*
112. *“There is a world of difference between what may be accepted in London and what is proper here.*

122. *There was talk of marriage.*
 149. *There was no answer from Charles*
 175. *there was help at hand*
 173. *alone there would be nothing for it but to ask, and pry, and demand, without knowing what he wanted*
 175. *there was help at hand.*
 177. *There aren't any names for bits of stone and wood*
 191. *There was a kind of stony embarrassment about him*

• **modification by a clause – (9)**

24. *there were days when it all became utterly blank and nothing.*
 51. *there was just the chance that any oddity that caught the eye of the pursuer might be the same that had caught the eye of the pursued.*
 52. *what proof is there that this has anything to do with them?*
 121. *“There is no reason why you should give me anything.”*
 129. *There are some men who are consoled by the idea that*
 186. *“There’s a sense in which your body would – forgive me – defile it*
 158. *There are some women who are stronger than gates and bars by their very ignorance*
 165. *“But there comes a point when vision’s no more than a child’s playing let’s pretend.”*
 172. *There’s something I have to do*

• **modification by adjective/adjectives – (6)**

11. *There was no other standard.*
 15. *What else could there be?*
 82. *“There isn’t a good one,”*
 91. *There was an unhappy silence*
 117. *There was a longer silence.*
 148. *There were various small rustlings*

• **quantifier + head – (5)**

31. *Are there two keys?*
 47. *If only there aren’t more strikes!*
 87. *There is only this one canoe*
 171. *there’ll be another one*
 182. *There aren’t enough words*

• **modification by a comparative (3)**

131. *there are more attractive. [women]*
 130. *there are women less attractive than their wives;*
 195. *there would be no horror as deep*

• **modification by an infinitive – (2)**

26. *There was the man to consider, and it was curious,*
 159. *so that housewives hung what linen there was to wash before smouldering fires that dirtied more than they dried*

• **complementation by an object (2)**

43. *There was no mistaking it.*
 44. *Oh, I felt, if it hadn’t been for the pit, an them as runs the pit, there had been no leaving me.*

- **modification by apposition – (1)**

10. *But there was no touch, no actual contact.*

- **modification by a participle (1)**

192. *There were steps going down the stair*

- **modification by combination of several postmodifying means – (46)**

- **adjective/quantifier and a prepositional phrase (18)**

1. *there is now no smooth road into the future*

12. *There was no organic connection with the thought and expression that had gone before.*

21. *There were occasional spasms of Michaelis.*

28. *But don't you think there is something special about him?*

35. *there were two great groups of dogs wrangling for the bitch goddess*

40. *There was a great relaying of the table*

37. *And there was something so mute and forlorn in her, compassion flamed in his bowels for her*

73. *there was something wrong about the last earl*

83. *“There was badness enough in the captain taking all that money*

84. *I don't think there was much goodness in the prince giving it*

85. *Was there another meaning in Saradine's blend of brilliancy and abruptness?*

101. *There came a stronger gust of wind,*

102. *There was only one answer to a crisis of this magnitude*

106. *There was even a remote relationship with the Drake family,*

120. *There must have been something sexual in their feelings?*

133. *there was something mysteriously religious about them*

144. *There are two kinds of hangover*

176. *There was no clear way of explaining why the fear was so obvious in the master builder*

- **adjective and a clause (6)**

22. *There was a gorgeous talk on Sunday evening, when the conversation drifted again to love.*

63. *There is the dead waiter, who was there when he could not be there.*

119. *There is a clever German doctor who has recently divided melancholia into several types.*

142. *Was there some delicate way he could ask?*

143. *There was not. [delicate way he could ask]*

151. *There was a nearer sound that told – [...] – that men were digging in earth and stone*

- **adjective/quantifier and participle (6)**

39. *There was a curious warning pleading in his voice.*

49. *There was half a moon shining*

75. *“There are three headless men,” “standing round this open grave*

94. *“I think there is something rather dangerous standing on these high places even to pray.”*

138. *There was a faint mist, compounding the scent of the spring verdure from the Park across the street and the old familiar soot.*

200. *There were two eyes looking at him through the panic*

- **adjective/quantifier and an infinitive (3)**

70. *There is only one thing to be done*

115. *There was first of all a very material dispute to arbitrate upon*

183. *there was nothing else to think of*

○ **prepositional phrase and a clause (3)**

7. *Only there was something in their deep-mouthed slurring of the dialect, and the thresh-thresh of their hob-nailed pit-boots as they trailed home in gangs on the asphalt from work that was terrible and a bit mysterious.*

178. *There was that in his face which had to be met and known,*

199. *There was a wilderness about her attack that made him indifferent to it*

○ **prepositional phrase and participle (2)**

5. *The amazing, the profound, the unbelievable thrill there was in passionately talking to some really clever young man by the hour, resuming day after day for months*

145. *He began to wonder if there wasn't something of Uriah Heep beginning to erupt on the surface of Sam's personality*

○ **prepositional phrase and infinitive (1)**

155. *"There was no need for you to sit there*

○ **other (7)**

74. *There is only one reason I know of for this being done*

76. *There are further peculiarities about this house, which must be described to start with, not only that the reader may understand this tragic tale, but also that he may realise what it was that the opening of the door revealed.*

88. *The more he gave to silence Stephen the less chance there was of finally escaping Antonelli.*

92. *There are two men standing outside this shop," went on the blacksmith with ponderous lucidity, "good tradesmen in Greenford whom you all know, who will swear that they saw me from before midnight till daybreak and long after in the committee-room of our Revival Mission, which sits all night, we save souls so fast.*

111. *There is only one good definition of God: the freedom that allows other freedoms to exist.*

180. *There was one August gale from the south west that set the spire swaying like a mast*

197. *There was a bitter stuff to drink, poppy perhaps, which he thought sometimes, was what allowed him to drift and swim so above the prone body*

b. Be + participle

Existential constructions with a participle following the head noun (13 instances):

Present participle

49. *There was half a moon shining*
75. *There are three headless men standing round this open grave*
92. *There are two men standing outside this shop, good tradesmen in Greenford whom you all know, who will swear that they saw me from before midnight till daybreak and long after in the committee-room of our Revival Mission, which sits all night*
109. *There were two or three meadows round it running down the cliffs*
138. *There was a faint mist, compounding the scent of the spring verdure from the Park across the street and the old familiar soot*
145. [...] *if there wasn't something of Uriah Heep beginning to erupt on the surface of Sam's personality*
162. *There was a constant adzing going on in the shed outside the north transept and a constant banging and thumping from the roof over the vault*
168. *There was sunlight at last flashing round him*
192. *There were steps going down the stair*
198. *Once there were candles, voices murmuring, and the touch of oil*
200. *There were two eyes looking at him through the panic*
94. [...] *there is something rather dangerous standing on these high places even to pray*

Past participle:

167. *But there was still a wide space left in the middle for the lifting of stone and wood*

c. Bare Existentials – FSP Structure

T – Tr – R(S) 99

3. **Theme** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a blank of insentience*)
4. **Theme** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme 1** (*something better*) – **rheme 2** (*something higher*)
5. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** ([*that*] *the amazing, the profound, the unbelievable thrill in passionately talking to some really clever young man by the hour, resuming day after day for months*)
6. **Theme** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) – **rheme** (*child*)
7. **Transition proper oriented element** (*Only*) – **theme** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something in their deep-mouthed slurring of the dialect, and the thresh-thresh of their hob-nailed pit-boots as they trailed home in gangs on the asphalt from work that was terrible and a bit mysterious*)
8. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme 1** (*no welcome home for the young squire*) – **rheme 2** (*no festivities*) – **rheme 3** (*no deputation*) – **rheme 4** (*not even a single flower*).
10. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*touch*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 2** (*actual contact*)
11. **Theme** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*other standard*)
12. **Theme** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*organic connection*) – **rheme proper** (*with the thought and expression that had gone before*)
13. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*nothing in it*)
14. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*nothing in Clifford's writing*)
17. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*nothing in these stories*)
21. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*occasional spasms of Michaelis*)
23. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*game*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 2 proper** (*pheasants*)
24. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*days*) – **rheme proper** (*when it all became utterly blank and nothing*)
26. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*the man to consider*)
32. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*seemed to be*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) – **rheme** – (*wind*)
34. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) - **rheme** (*rising*)
35. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*two great groups of dogs wrangling for the bitch goddess*)
37. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something so mute and forlorn in her*)
39. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a curious warning pleading in his voice*)
40. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a great relaying of the table*)
41. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something about him*)
43. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*mistaking it*)
44. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme** (*no leaving me*)

45. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a pause*)
47. **Transition proper oriented elements** (*If only*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*aren't*) – **rheme** (*more strikes*)
49. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was shining*) – **rheme** (*half a moon*)
51. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*just*) – **composite rhematic part** (*the chance that any oddity that caught the eye of the pursuer might be the same that had caught the eye of the pursued*)
57. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a silence*).
63. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*the dead waiter, who was there when he could not be there*)
69. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme** (*nobody*)
70. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one thing to be done*)
73. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something wrong about the last earl*)
74. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one reason I know of for this being done*)
75. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*three headless men standing round this open grave*)
76. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*further peculiarities about this house, which must be described to start with*)
78. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*is*) – **rheme** (*something in the air of this place*)
80. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*twenty-three snippets papers and only twenty-two pieces snippets off*)
- }
}
rheme 2
rheme 1
83. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*badness enough in the captain taking all that money*)
84. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*much goodness in the prince giving it*)
86. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*no time for nonsense*)
87. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*this one canoe*)
88. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*the less chance of finally escaping Antonelli*)
91. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*an unhappy silence*)
92. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*two men standing outside this shop, good tradesmen in Greenford whom you all know, who will swear that they saw me from before midnight till daybreak and long after in the committee-room of our Revival Mission, which sits all night*)
94. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*something rather dangerous standing on these high places even to pray*)
98. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a pause*)
99. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*doubt that he deliberately killed her through her blindness*)
101. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*came*) – **rheme** (*a stronger gust of wind*)
102. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one answer to a crisis of this magnitude*)
103. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*would have been*) – **rheme** (*a place in the Gestapo for the lady*)

104. **Transition proper oriented element** (*But*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*her only too visible sorrow, which showed she was a sinner*)
105. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a tight and absurdly long coat to match; a canvas wideawake hat of an indeterminate beige; a massive ashplant, which he had bought on his way to the Cobb; and a voluminous rucksack, from which you might have shaken out an already heavy array of hammers, wrappings, notebooks, pillboxes, adzes, and heaven knows what else*)
106. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*even*) – **rheme** (*a remote relationship with the Drake family*)
108. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme** (*Charles's daffodils and jonquils, whose perfume she now inhaled*)
111. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one good definition of God: the freedom that allows other freedoms to exist*)
112. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*a world of difference between what may be accepted in London and what is proper here*)
115. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*first of all*) – **rheme** (*a very material dispute to arbitrate upon*)
117. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a longer silence*)
119. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*a clever German doctor who has recently divided melancholia into several types*)
121. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*reason why you should give me anything*)
125. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **transition proper oriented element** (*still*) – **rheme** (*deception in the flesh, or Ernestina, to be faced*)
126. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*new curtains – and the carpets*)
rheme 1 rheme 2 129.
- Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*some men who are consoled by the idea that there are women less attractive than their wives*)
130. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*women less attractive than their wives*)
131. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*more attractive [women]*)
132. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme** (*none*)
133. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*something mysteriously religious about them*)
138. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a faint mist, compounding the scent of the spring verdure from the Park across the street and the old familiar soot*)
144. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*two kinds of hangover*)
145. **Transition proper oriented element** (*If*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*wasn't*) – **rheme** (*something of Uriah Heep beginning to erupt on the surface of Sam's personality*)
148. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*various small rustlings*)
149. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*answer from Charles*)
151. **Theme** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a nearer sound that told that men were digging in earth and stone*)
155. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*no need for you to sit there*)
158. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*are*) – **rheme** (*some women who are stronger than gates and bars by their very ignorance*)

159. **Rheme** (*what linen*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rest of the rheme** (*to wash*)
162. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme 1** (*a constant adzing going on in the shed outside the north transept*) – **rheme 2** (*and a constant banging and thumping from the roof over the vault*)
163. **Transition proper oriented element** (*But*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*other ways she could get to her house*)
165. **Transition proper oriented element** (*But*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*comes*) – **rheme** (*a point when vision's no more than a child's playing let's pretend*)
166. **Transition proper oriented element** (*Whenever*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*should be*) – **rheme** (*darkness and no thought*)
171. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*will be*) – **rheme** (*another one*)
172. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*something I have to do*)
173. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*would be*) – **rheme** (*nothing for it but to ask, and pry, and demand, without knowing what he wanted*)
175. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*help at hand*)
176. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*clear way of explaining why the fear was so obvious in the master builder*)
177. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*aren't*) – **rheme** (*any names for bits of stone and wood*)
180. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*one August gale from the south west that set the spire swaying like a mast*)
182. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*aren't*) – **rheme** (*enough words*)
183. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*nothing else to think of*)
186. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*a sense in which your body would defile it*)
189. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*tracing its complications back to the root*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 2** (*disentangling the anguished faces that cried out from among it*)
191. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a kind of stony embarrassment about him*)
192. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*steps going down the stair*)
195. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*would be*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*horror as deep*)
197. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*a bitter stuff to drink, poppy perhaps, which he thought sometimes, was what allowed him to drift and swim so above the prone body*)
199. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*wilderness about her attack that made him indifferent to it*)
200. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*were*) – **rheme** (*two eyes looking at him through the panic*)

T – Tr – R Questions/Interrogative sentences 8

15. **Theme** (*there*) – **transition** (*could be*) – **rheme** (*What else*)
18. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*should be*) – **rheme** (*Why anything in them*)

31. **Transition** (*Are*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*two keys*)
42. **Transition** (*Is*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*any foundation to the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby*)
52. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*what proof*) – **rheme proper** (*that this has anything to do with them?*)
85. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*Was*) – **rheme** (*another meaning in Saradine's blend of brilliancy and abruptness?*)
120. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*must have been*) – **rheme** (*something sexual in their feelings?*)
142. **Transition** (*Was*) – **theme** (*there*) – **rheme** (*some delicate way he could ask?*)

T(S) – Tr/ R(V) 7

71. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*must be*) – **rheme** (*somebody pretty near her*)
81. **Transition proper oriented elements** (*if ever*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*was*) – **diatheme** (*one*)
82. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*isn't*) – **diatheme** (*a good one*)
122. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*was*) – **rheme** (*talk of marriage*)
124. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*are*) – **rheme** (*fruit*)

The Second Instance Level FSP

28. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **rheme proper** (*is*) – **diatheme** (*something special about him*)

Answer to a question

143. **Theme** (*There*) – **rheme** (*was not*)

d. Negative Bare Existentials

8. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme 1** (*no welcome home for the young squire*) – **rheme 2** (*no festivities*) – **rheme 3** (*no deputation*) – **rheme 4** (*not even a single flower*).

10. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*touch*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 2** (*actual contact*)

11. **Theme** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*other standard*)

12. **Theme** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*organic connection*) – **rheme proper** (*with the thought and expression that had gone before*)

23. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*game*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 2 proper** (*pheasants*)

43. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*mistaking it*)

99. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*doubt that he deliberately killed her through her blindness*)

121. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*reason why you should give me anything*)

149. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*answer from Charles*)

155. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme** (*no need for you to sit there*)

176. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme** (*clear way of explaining why the fear was so obvious in the master builder*)

182. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*aren't*) – **rheme** (*enough words*)

189. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 1** (*tracing its complications back to the root*) – **NegFocA** (*no*) – **rheme 2** (*disentangling the anguished faces that cried out from among it*)

- negative determiner constitutes the rheme proper due to contextual dependence of the head

6. **Theme** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) – **rheme** (*child*)

32. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*seemed to be*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) – **rheme** – (*wind*)

34. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) – **rheme** (*rising*)

44. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had been*) – **rheme proper** (*no*) – **rheme** (*leaving me*)

e. Focalizer

Focalizers occurring within our sample of 200 instances of existential construction: 10 instances

Bare existentials: 9

51. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*just*) – **composite rhematic part** (*the chance that any oddity that caught the eye of the pursuer might be the same that had caught the eye of the pursued*)

70. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one thing to be done*)

87. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*this one canoe*)

89. **Transition proper oriented element** (*till*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had*) **focalizer** (*even*) – **transition** (*come*) – **rheme** (*a whisper of insanity*)

94. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*something rather dangerous standing on these high places*) **even** *to pray*)

┌───┐
rheme proper

102. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one answer to a crisis of this magnitude*)

106. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*even*) – **rheme** (*a remote relationship with the Drake family*)

111. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*is*) – **focalizer** (*only*) – **rheme** (*one good definition of God: the freedom that allows other freedoms to exist*)

115. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*was*) – **focalizer** (*first of all*) – **rheme** (*a very material dispute to arbitrate upon*)

Existentials with adverbial: 1

29. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition proper** (*might*) – **focalizer** (*even*) – **the rest of transition** (*be*) – **rheme** (*real men*) – **diatheme** (*in the next phase*)

f. Questions – FSP Structure

Wh-Questions

15. *What else could there be?* (bare existential)
Theme (*there*) – **transition** (*could be*) – **rheme** (*What else*)
18. *Why should there be anything in them?* (bare existential)
Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*should be*) – **rheme** (*Why anything in them*)
52. *what proof is there that this has anything to do with them?* (bare existential)
Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*is*) – **rheme** (*what proof*) – **rheme proper** (*that this has anything to do with them?*)
96. *But who was there in those hardly inhabited flats to murder anybody?* (existential with an adverbial)
Transition proper oriented element (*But*) – **rheme** (*who*) – **transition** (*was*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **diatheme** (*in those hardly inhabited flats*) – **rest of the rheme** (*to murder anybody*)

Y/N Questions

31. *Are there two keys?* (bare existential)
Transition (*Are*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*two keys*)
42. *is there any foundation to the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby?* (bare existential)
Transition (*Is*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **rheme** (*any foundation to the rumour that we may entertain hopes of an heir to Wragby*)
85. *Was there another meaning in Saradine's blend of brilliancy and abruptness?* (bare existential)
Theme proper (*there*) – **transition** (*Was*) – **rheme** (*another meaning in Saradine's blend of brilliancy and abruptness?*)

Declarative Y/N Questions

120. *There must have been something sexual in their feelings?* (bare existential)
Theme proper (*There*) – **transition** (*must have been*) – **rheme** (*something sexual in their feelings*) (bare existential)

Rhetorical Y/N Question

142. *Was there some delicate way he could ask?*
Transition (*Was*) – **theme** (*there*) – **rheme** (*some delicate way he could ask?*) (bare existential)

g. Existential constructions with adverbial(s) 86

Initial position 14

2. Otherwise (TrPrO) there were no near relatives.
64. In the large entrance hall of the house (Set) there was ample room even for Sir Leopold and the removal of his wraps
67. “before (TrPrO) there is a minute more of this nonsense I must tell you something about myself as shortly as I can.”
89. till (TrPrO) there had even come a whisper of insanity
90. Certainly (TrPrO) there was something hardly human about the colonel’s wolfish pursuit of pleasure
97. where there has been love (Set) there must soon be hatred
113. On one day (Set) there was a long excursion to Sidmouth;
179. this time (Set) there was nothing to be done but wait
181. after that (Set) there was a pause
185. In this uncountryside (Set) there was blue sky and light, consent and no sin
188. at every altar in the side aisles (Set) there were nests of the candles you had given
190. Then (Set) there was another arm
196. Then (Set) there was a spreading silence
198. Once (Set) there were candles, voices murmuring, and the touch of oil

Medial position 8

1. there is now (Set) no smooth road into the future
56. There was again (TrPrO) a silence
65. there ran through it (Set) a rage of improvisation which came chiefly from Crook the clown
107. There runs, between Lyme Regis and Axmouth six miles to the west (Set), one of the strangest coastal landscapes in Southern England.
110. Yet there had remained locally (Set) a feeling that Ware Commons was public property.
118. There was, too (TrPrO), something faintly dark about him,
139. There pressed on Charles (Set) more than the common human instinct to preserve personal identity;
140. there lay behind him (Set) all those years of thought, speculation, self-knowledge.

Final position 47

9. There was no communication between Wragby Hall and Tevershall village (Set), none.
16. what there was in the moment (Spec) was everything.
20. There was silence for some minutes (Set).

22. There was a gorgeous talk on Sunday evening (Set), when the conversation drifted again to love
25. There was nothing now (Set) but this empty treadmill of what Clifford called the integrated life, the long living together of two people, who are in the habit of being in the same house with one another
27. there wasn't a man in the world (Set) whose children you wanted
29. There might even be real men, in the next phase (Set)
30. And there was a sparkle of yellow jasmine by the door (Set)
33. Oh, there's not much difference in men (Set)
36. [And Mrs. Bolton was carefully dressing him in evening clothes], for there were important business guests in the house (Set)
38. Oh, if only there were other men to be with, to fight that sparkling electric Thing outside there, to preserve the tenderness of life, the tenderness of women, and the natural riches of desire (Spec)
46. There's sure to be a bad nut in a basketful (Set)
50. There was a touch of appeal in her (Set).
53. there may well be wonderful universes above us (Set) where reason is utterly unreasonable?
54. there was no ultimate exit at all except through this front door, which was guarded by Ivan and the armoury (Spec)
55. that is all there is on this lawn (Set).
58. If there were a fashionable hotel in London (Set) which no man could enter who was under six foot
59. There was a light immediately above the semicircular arch of this opening (Set)
61. and there were no more than fifteen to-night (Spec)
62. there are the rococo excrescences – yourselves, let us say (TrPrO)
66. There were hollows and bowers at the extreme end of that leafy garden (Set), in which the laurels and other immortal shrubs showed against sapphire sky and silver moon, even in that midwinter, warm colours of the south
68. There was nobody there (Set)
77. when there was some evil quite near (Set)
79. there is a long seat there under the veranda (Set), where we can smoke out of the rain.
93. I believe the force in that blow was just the force there is in earthquakes (Spec), and no force less.
95. There are thousands of such curt, strenuous ladies in the offices of London (Set)
96. But who was there in those hardly inhabited flats (Set) to murder anybody?
100. There was no human, perhaps no living, thing for a wide circle (Set)
109. There were two or three meadows round it, running down the cliffs; (Set)
114. But there was something in that face (Set), which Charles examined closely in profile, that made him determine not to go
135. There is talk in the town (Set) of committing you to an institution.
136. There was a distinct stir in his loins (Spec).
137. There were brothels there (Set), and dance-halls and gin-palaces;
146. there was to be no duenna nonsense that evening (Set).
152. There was dust on his brown tunic, his crossgartered legs, his old shoes (Spec).
153. There was a cloth on the pavement at his feet (Set), and he scraped carefully at the lump of stone

160. For there had been no rain for a week (Spec)
161. There was sinful pride in that (Set), but also loyalty and service
164. There came a sharp scream from by the south west pillar (Set)
168. There was sunlight at last, flashing round him (Set)
169. there are gallows everywhere (Spec)
170. There were astonishing days in December (Set), when the church never knew the sun, when the nave was
174. There was a kind of a childish security in looking at the game (Set)
178. There was that in his face (Set) which had to be met and known
184. There came a smash from the south transept (Set), the crash and shatter of stone
187. “There’s a kinship among men who have set by a dying fire and measured the worth of their life by it (Spec).”

More adverbials

19. ... there were always (TrPrO) people in the house (Set).
48. Then (TrPrO) there is no common humanity between us all (Set)!
60. There never (Spec) have been more than fifteen waiters at this place (Set)
72. For many centuries (Set) there had never been a decent lord in Glengyle Castle (Set)
116. Unfortunately (TrPrO) there was now (Set) a duenna present – Mrs Tranter’s cook.
123. And then (TrPrO) too (TrPrO) there was that strangely Egyptian quality among the Victorians (Set); that claustrophilia we see so clearly evidenced in their enveloping, mummifying clothes, their narrow-windowed and -corridorred architecture, their fear of the open and of the naked.
127. There was thunder in the offing (Set), as in his heart (Spec).
128. There was, curiously (TrPrO), some faint resemblance to Sarah in the face (Set);
134. Yet there rose in him (Set), and inextinguishably (TrPrO), a desire to protect.
141. Then (Set) there came out of nowhere (Set) Sarah’s face
147. Then (Set) suddenly (TrPrO) there was a little cascade of coals from the fire.
150. There came to Charles (Set) then (Set) a sharp revulsion – not against her, but against the situation
154. There is a place, [or there was before your day], on the south side of the choir (Spec), where the sun comes in, between some old bishop and the Provoste Chantry (Spec)
156. for (TrPrO) already (TrPrO) there was less dust in the air (Set)
157. Now (Set) there was a grimness in the master builder’s smile (Set)
167. But there was still (TrPrO) a wide space left in the middle for the lifting of stone and wood (Spec)
193. At last (TrPrO) there were woman’s feet among the rest (Set), and the hem of a red dress
194. All at once (TrPrO) there was a clearness in Jocelin’s head (Set)

h. Extended Presentation Scale

I/ Final Adverbial

- **after the head of NS**

154. There is a place, [or there was before your day], on the south side of the choir (Spec), where the sun comes in, between some old bishop and the Provoste Chantry (Spec)

- **after the whole of NS**

16. what there was in the moment (Spec) was everything.

38. Oh, if only there were other men to be with, to fight that sparkling electric Thing outside there, to preserve the tenderness of life, the tenderness of women, and the natural riches of desire (Spec)

54. there was no ultimate exit at all except through this front door, which was guarded by Ivan and the armoury (Spec)

61. and there were no more than fifteen to-night (Spec)

93. I believe the force in that blow was just the force there is in earthquakes (Spec), and no force less.

136. There was a distinct stir in his loins (Spec).

152. There was dust on his brown tunic, his crossgartered legs, his old shoes (Spec).

160. For there had been no rain for a week (Spec)

169. there are gallows everywhere (Spec)

187. “There’s a kinship among men who have set by a dying fire and measured the worth of their life by it (Spec).”

127. There was thunder in the offing (Set), as in his heart (Spec).

147. Then (Set) suddenly (TrPrO) there was a little cascade of coals from the fire (Spec).

167. But there was still (TrPrO) a wide space left in the middle for the lifting of stone and wood (Spec)

II/ Medial Adverbial

60. There never (Spec) have been more than fifteen waiters at this place (Set)

i. Other Verbs Than Be

Traktovat ve zvláštním oddíle a na závěr oddílu uvést, zda mají z hlediska FSP nějaké zvláštnosti či jsou zcela analogické.

65. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*ran*) – **diatheme** (*through it*) – **rheme** (*a rage of improvisation which came chiefly from Crook the clown*)

89. **Transition proper oriented element** (*till*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had*) **focalizer** (*even*) – **transition** (*come*) – **rheme** (*a whisper of insanity*)

101. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*came*) – **rheme** (*a stronger gust of wind*)

107. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*runs*) – **diatheme** (*between Lyme Regis and Axmouth six miles to the west*) – **rheme** (*one of the strangest coastal landscapes in Southern England*)

110. **Transition proper oriented element** (*Yet*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*had remained*) – **diatheme** (*locally*) – **rheme** (*a feeling that Ware Commons was public property*)

134. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*rose*) – **diatheme** (*in him*) – **transition proper** (*and inextinguishably*) – **rheme** (*a desire to protect*)

139. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*pressed on*) – **diatheme** (*Charles*) – **rheme** (*more than the common human instinct to preserve personal identity*);

140. **Theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*lay*) – **diatheme** (*behind him*) – **rheme** (*all those years of thought, speculation, self-knowledge*)

141. **Transition proper oriented element** (*Then*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*came*) – **diatheme** (*out of nowhere*) – **rheme** (*Sarah's face*)

150. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*came*) – **diatheme** (*to Charles then*) – **rheme** (*a sharp revulsion*)

164. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*came*) – **rheme** (*a sharp scream*) – **diatheme** (*from the south west pillar*)

165. **Transition proper oriented element** (*But*) – **theme proper** (*there*) – **transition** (*comes*) – **rheme** (*a point when vision's no more than a child's playing let's pretend*)

184. **Theme proper** (*There*) – **transition** (*came*) – **rheme** (*a crash*) – **diatheme** (*from the south transept*)